

101 I Want To Make You Mine, Yuyan!!

Upon hearing Lu Qiang's question, Jiang Yuyan didn't know what to say. She looked confused but shy too. She averted her sight from him and lowered it downward.

Lu Qiang knew, what she was feeling. He could see that she wanted to say yes but she was feeling shy and it was obvious for any girl to hesitate to admit it, but still he wanted to make sure of it.

He whispered her name in her ears, "Yuyan!"

On hearing her name, Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her bright and starry eyes. Those eyes, which looked confused and little scared and made her look even more innocent.

Lu Qiang paused and stared into her beautiful eyes for a moment that made his heart to skip a beat and he almost forgot what he was about to ask her.

He cleared his throat and then asked, "I need to know, what you want? Do you want me to stop?"

Jiang Yuyan shook her head awkwardly without looking at him and lowered her sight again. She felt shy to admit it that she too wanted him. Her heart was pounding faster and faster.

Lu Qiang called her name again, "Yuyan!"

Jiang Yuyan again looked at him with shy expressions on her face.

Lu Qiang smiled a little and said in a comforting way, "You don't have to feel embarrassed about it. We both know what we feel about each other."

Jiang Yuyan was looking at him as she was agreeing to what he was saying.

Lu Qiang continued and said with a teasing smile on his face, "And of course, you can feel shy...because you looks

beautiful when you are shy.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled too on hearing his teasing words.

Lu Qiang stopped smiling and said calmly, “But next time, answers me while looking into my eyes.”

She nodded while looking into his eyes.

As Lu Qiang made sure that she wanted it too, he didn't wait for a moment more. he lifted her in his arms and put her on the bed slowly. He too climbed into the bed and was on top of her. He didn't put the complete weight of his body on hers. The lower half of his body was on bed while he supported his upper body with his elbows on either side of her chest.

Jiang Yuyan was looking at him and she had goose bumps on her body again with the thoughts of what would be going to happen further.

Lu Qiang noticed her shivering a little and said while looking at her, “Are you scared?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded while looking at him.

Lu Qiang smiled and said to make her feel relax, “Just stop me when you don't want me to go further.”

Lu Qiang knew, Jiang Yuyan will definitely react the way, she did that night but this time he was ready to face it. He wanted her to face and overcome the fear of being physically close. Also, he knew, it can't be possible to make it happen that soon because he saw her scared in her sleep and he knew she was suffering from a trauma.

Jiang Yuyan nodded again while looking at him with her innocent looking eyes.

Jiang Yuyan wanted to do this because she liked it but there was one more reason. She wanted to test herself that she can overcome her fear or not. More than herself, she wanted to overcome it for the person who loved her more than anything else.

She wanted to be the reason of his happiness instead of making him feel worried about her all the time. She didn't want him to suffer because of her horrifying past.

Lu Qiang moved closer to her face and kissed her again. He put a little weight of his body on hers as he moved his right hand to caress her left cheek.

Later he moved his one hand below the curve of her back. He used other one for a support on elbow, but that hand too was busy in caressing her cheek, neck and shoulder. This made him to put his body weight on her and her soft bosoms, to touch his strong chest. Both could feel the change in his lower body.

Being close to him, in a bed made her feel ticklish inside somewhere. She liked it and wanted it more.

The way he kissed her as claiming his right on her, she liked it. The way he was making her feel want it more, she liked it. The ticklish feeling she was having inside somewhere, she liked it. The way he caressed her body with his hands to feel her curves, she liked it. The way his body touched hers and the warmth she felt from his body, she liked it.

His manly smell, his sweet taste, his touch, his comforting and caring words, she liked the every single bit of it.

After sharing a passionate kiss with her and making her lips to bleed a little, Lu Qiang stopped. He looked in her eyes and said in his hoarse voice, while panting and breathing heavily, "I..I don't want to stop myself today. I..want..to make you mine... Yuyan!"

Jiang Yuyan too was panting and breathing heavily and was looking into his eyes. She understood what his words meant and also she was aware of the change in his lower body as she could feel it against her lower abdomen.

Jiang Yuyan too felt like to want it eagerly. She didn't show any signs of denial and keep staring in his pitch black and intense looking eyes as waiting for him to move further.

Lu Qiang got her approval from her sight. He moved to her neck to taste it. He started to suck her neck passionately by using his lips, tongue and his teeth.

Jiang Yuyan arched her back as moaning softly while running her hands through his hairs. She moved her head up to give him proper access to her neck. His passionate kisses on her

neck made her moan loudly this time which made Lu Qiang to go even wild.

In just a one swipe he pulled the belts on her both shoulders down and started to suck her shoulders and kiss her collarbones. He lifted her up a little by inserting his both hands below the curve of her back, which made her body arched a little and allowed Lu Qiang to hold it closer to him, tightly. She was too light weight for him to do it very easily.

After being done with her shoulders and her neck, Lu Qiang freed his hands and looked at her chest which was still covered in a silk fabric of a night dress. He had as urge to torn that fabric and to do what he wanted to do but he stooped. He was panting and breathing heavily and his peach black eyes were gazing at her chest to devour it at the very moment.

.

102 Sleeping Together!!

Lu Qiang closed his eyes for a moment. He knew, that was the forbidden place for him, as she said before, she can't handle to get touched over there. Also, he still remembered her reaction when he tried to touch her there, that night.

He wanted her to get out of that trauma but he was more afraid to make her feel scared like before. He decided to wait for sometime more as he didn't want to ruin the best moments, they just shared together.

Jiang Yuyan looked at him while panting heavily as she realized, Lu Qiang had stopped. His eyes were closed as he was in a pain and was thinking about something.

She understood, he was trying to resist his desire to go down there to her chest and touch it. She didn't want him to stop. She wanted to get out of that abyss just for him. She wanted to test herself and make herself stronger.

Lu Qiang opened his eyes and looked at her and said, "I guess, I should stop now."

"Don't stop!" Before he could isolate himself from her body, Jiang Yuyan said these words which made Lu Qiang surprised.

Lu Qiang surprisingly asked, "Are you sure?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, "Yes!"

Lu Qiang gave her a peck on her lips and said, "Stop me, if you can't take it."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and inhaled deeply to get ready to face it.

Lu Qiang understood everything about her, what and why she wanted to do certain things sometimes. He decided to support her, but he preferred to take it slowly, not in the passionate way which he was doing it earlier.

Lu Qiang pulled the night dress down with his fingers but didn't uncover her chest completely, so that he can stop immediately when she would ask him.

As Lu Qiang started to kiss her on the chest, Jiang shut her eyes tightly and clutched his T-shirt on his shoulders in her both hands. He looked at her and saw, she was trying to bear with it

Lu Qiang pulled her clothes to half way by pulling the straps of her dress and her lingerie, further down from her shoulders which made her bosoms half uncovered.

When he started to kiss and suck the soft skin of her bosoms, her body shook a little and she pulled her hands back from his shoulders. Her eyes and lips were tightly shut but she didn't ask him to stop.

Lu Qiang stopped and lifted his head up to look at her. He noticed the painful expressions on her face. Tears were rolling down from the corners of her eyes.

Lu Qiang covered her chest back by pulling her dress up and moving the straps of her clothes back to her shoulders.

Jiang Yuyan realized that Lu Qiang had stopped. She opened her teary eyes and asked in a broken voice, "W..Why..did..you..stop?"

Lu Qiang looked at her, kissed her on forehead, wiped the tears from the corners of her eyes and said while smiling a little, "This is enough for now."

"But..." Jiang Yuyan tried to talk again.

"Shhhh! We have lots of time in future, no need to rush." Lu Qiang put his index finger on her lips to stop her from saying anything further.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and he removed his finger from her lips. He then decided to move away from her body and was ready to get up, just then she stopped him by calling his name, "Lu Qiang."

Lu Qiang stopped and looked at her back saying, "Ummm?"

"Will you be ok? I mean..." Jiang Yuyan was worried about Lu Qiang as she knew how much he wanted her, moments before.

She felt bad for disappointing him. She tried very hard and decided to stay strong and not let the things from the past to ruin their moments. She wouldn't have stopped Lu Qiang, whatever she had to bear for it but Lu Qiang stopped and she blamed herself for it.

"I am fine. Trust me." Lu Qiang replied before she could say anything further and feel bad about it.

Lu Qiang knew she was worried about him and must be blaming herself but he was not disappointed at all. He was happy, as for him she was at least ready to accept him from her heart even though her body said otherwise. He was sure, with all the love between them, they would be able to overcome it one day.

Lu Qiang got up from the bed and covered her with a quilt and said, "It's going to be a dawn soon. You have to sleep for a sometime."

Jiang Yuyan nodded while looking at him.

Then, Lu Qiang pointed towards the couch in the bedroom and said, "I will be there. If you need anything, just wake me up."

Jiang Yuyan again nodded.

Lu Qiang leaned down and kissed her on her forehead and said with a pleasant smile on his lips, "Good night, Yuyan,"

Lu Qiang was about to turn around to move towards the couch, just then Jiang Yuyan held his hand and stopped him.

As she held his hand, Lu Qiang stopped and turned to look at her. She was still holding his hand.

Lu Qiang looked at her and asked, "Do you need something?"

Jiang Yuyan shook her head while looking at him with the expressions of little girl who was anticipating something from him.

Lu Qiang held her hand in his both hands and asked, "Then?"

Jiang Yuyan replied, "Sleep here!"

Lu Qiang looked at her with surprised expressions. It was not a big deal as both were already have been too close to each

other, but still Lu Qiang didn't expect her to say this.

He asked, "Are you still feeling scared because of the nightmare?"

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, "No! I just want you to sleep here with me."

She said it straight forwardly without any hesitation.

Lu Qiang nodded and stepped forward to sleep beside her.

Jiang Yuyan shifted a little to make a space for him. Lu Qiang lifted the quilt and slept beside her by leaving a few inches distance between them. He then covered himself with a quilt too.

Both were staring at the ceiling, then, Jiang Yuyan looked at him. Lu Qiang felt her sight at him and he too looked at her. She didn't say anything but Lu Qiang understood what he could.

He lifted his one arm which was in the side of Jiang Yuyan and made a space for her. Jiang Yuyan immediately turned towards him and slept while keeping her head on his arm and placed her arm on his chest.

Lu Qiang smiled and patted her head like she was a baby. Jiang Yuyan smiled pleasantly and closed her eyes.

Lu Qiang kissed on her head and closed his eyes too and both fell asleep.

103 You Can't Stop Me!!

Soon it was a morning in few hours. Sun rays started to brighten the bedroom where Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were sleeping. Lu Qiang woke up, he opened his eyes and looked at the woman who was sleeping soundly while using his arm as a pillow and circling her hand around his chest.

Jiang Yuyan looked like an innocent child who was aloof to all the worries in the world.

Lu Qiang smiled and kissed on her head. He turned a little to remove his hand from below her head. He was being careful to not wake her up.

Lu Qiang lifted her head with his other hand and pulled back his hand from below her head. He pulled the pillow which he used for himself and placed her head gently on it.

Lu Qiang got up from the bed and was about to move, he stopped as he heard a sweet voice.

“Good Morning, Lu Qiang!” Jiang Yuyan woke up.

Lu Qiang turned back and looked at Jiang Yuyan. She was looking at Lu Qiang with pleasant smile on her face. It looked like she had a good sleep.

Lu Qiang smiled and moved back to her. Then, he sat back on the edge of the bed, leaned towards her to give her a peck on the lips and said, “Good Morning, Yuyan!”

Jiang Yuyan blushed as he kissed her on the lips. She was still lying down in a bed.

“Did you sleep well?” Lu Qiang asked.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Yes!”

“Do you want to sleep more?” Lu Qiang asked again.

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, “Nope!”

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, “Ok then. It's time to see something exciting.” He then moved to Jiang Yuyan's

side of the wardrobe.

Jiang Yuyan got up and sat in the bed. She was looking at him while rubbing her both eyes with her palm. She had confused expressions on her face and was observing what he was up to.

Lu Qiang pulled out a wrap gown which was matching to her night dress. He walked towards her with the wrap gown in his hands and stood up beside the bed.

Lu Qiang didn't say anything, just lifted her from the bed then put her down to make her to stand on her feet.

Jiang Yuyan didn't know what was going on she was just quietly letting him do, what he was doing. She was getting used to his such kind of behavior, when he did something, suddenly and unexpected.

Lu Qiang opened that wrap gown and put it on her. He secured it by tying the belt of wrap gown around her waist and said while holding her wrist, "Let's go. We are getting late."

Lu Qiang didn't give her a chance to ask where they were going and started walking while holding her hand.

Jiang Yuyan too didn't ask where they were going. She just quietly walked along with him.

When they reached downstairs, butler greeted them saying, "Good Morning Master and Mistress."

Lu Qiang was in a hurry so he just passed by him but Jiang Yuyan turned her head to look at him with surprised expressions on her face. She was actually surprised to hear him calling her a Mistress.

Jiang Yuyan thought, 'She was not married yet to Lu Qiang and he is already calling her a mistress, a mistress of this beautiful house'.

She turned her head back, smiled and continued walking along with Lu Qiang.

Just in a while, both reached to the same spot of the hill where they were observing a beautiful view of the city last night.

Lu Qiang stopped there and said, "Here we are."

Jiang looked in front of her. She saw the view. It was totally different from what she saw last night and it was obvious because it was a day not a night but still there was something different she felt in her heart.

As they were on hill, sun rays reached there earlier than they could reach down there to the city.

City looked beautiful. As it was early morning, there were not much vehicles running on the streets, so there was no movement or sound they could see or hear from here.

Birds were flying in the sky. City looked like surrounded by clouds.

It was a beautiful view, so peaceful and heartwarming. Jiang Yuyan stood there and was looking at it. She closed her eyes to feel the morning breeze. She had a peaceful smile on her face.

Lu Qiang looked at her and smiled too. After spending some time there while enjoying the morning treat for their eyes both went back to the duplex.

When they went inside, butler was there too. He greeted them again and asked, "Master-Mistress, what would you like to have for breakfast?"

Lu Qiang looked at him and said, "Everything, that Mistress of this house will like."

Butler nodded and left to the kitchen.

Jiang Yuyan was just observing these two people, a master and a servant. She was just stunned to see this, what was happening.

Earlier when the butler called her mistress, she thought, he might be mistaken but now Lu Qiang too called her mistress of this house.

When butler left, she looked at Lu Qiang with the questioning expressions.

Lu Qiang too looked at her. He knew, what she was thinking about. He smiled and said, "Mistress of this house! Let's go get fresh first." He then signaled her to go upstairs first.

Jiang Yuyan moved in the direction of the stairs, still having those expressions on her face. Lu Qiang followed her behind.

Jiang Yuyan halted in her track after climbing few stairs up and turned around. She was just one step up from him that made her to stand face to face in front of him. There was no height difference now.

She looked straight into his eyes and asked, “Mistress?....Of this house?”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Yes! What else can I call you.”

“But...”

“Don’t you want to be a mistress of this house? Our house?” Lu Qiang asked.

“No! it’s not like that...It’s just that... We are....”

“Marriage is not necessary for me to call you my wife and the mistress of this household.” Lu Qiang stopped her and replied as he knew what she was going to say.”

“Hmmm?” Jiang Yuyan had surprised expressions again on her face but she liked what he said.

Lu Qiang continued, “Yes! In my heart you are already my wife, remaining things are just formalities to show it to the world.”

Jiang Yuyan was listening to him while staring in his eyes. She didn’t know how to reply him.

Lu Qiang mischievously smiled and said, “The only thing left is to consummate this marriage and I think we should do it as soon as possible. What do you say?”

“Cough**Cough!” Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes open widely.

Lu Qiang smiled and moved forward to kiss her but before he could do it, Jiang Yuyan moved her face back, covered her lips with her hands and climbed one step up backward.

Lu Qiang looked at her with his one eyebrow raised and questioning expressions on his face.

Jiang Yuyan replied while still covering her mouth with a palm, "I haven't brushed my teeth."

Upon hearing this Lu Qiang Laughed and said, "Haha! Me neither, so we are even."

He too climbed one step up to match to her height and immediately pulled her closer by circling his hand around her waist before she could move back up any further.

Jiang Yuyan was still covering her mouth with a palm. Lu Qiang kissed on her palm and said, "You can't stop me and you know it better."

104 Two Options...

Jiang Yuyan was just looking at him with her eyes wide open which were saying “No” for a kiss with her both palms tightly covering her mouth.

Lu Qiang was smiling to see her scared like a little kitten. Only her bright, beautiful eyes were enough to make his heart skip a beat. Now he wanted to kiss her even more.

He knew she wouldn't remove her palms easily from her mouth and he didn't want to do it forcefully. He just whispered in his right ear, “Two options, either remove your hands from your lips or I'll take you to the bathroom just like this to have a bath together and trust me I would like to go for a second option.”

Upon hearing this, Jiang Yuyan felt like she was trapped. She shook her head in a reflex of, what she heard. She then replied, while still covering her mouth with her palms, “Servants are here.”

Lu Qiang was enjoying her reaction and couldn't help but laughed a little then he replied, “Don't mind them, this is our house.”

Even after hearing him saying this, she was still standing there with her mouth covered with her both palms.

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, “Looks like, you too liked the second option. Fine, then let's go to the bathroom.”

He was about to lift her up to carry her to the bathroom, just then Jiang Yuyan removed her palms and kissed him on his lips.

Lu Qiang stopped and kissed her back. He held her tightly and stood there on the stairs while kissing her.

Butler came out of the kitchen for some work. When he saw his master and mistress kissing, standing on a staircase, he turned back and went back to the kitchen. Then he ordered

other servants inside, not to go out in a living room for a moment.

After a while, when they finished their morning treat, Lu Qiang smiled and said in a teasing way, “You always taste delicious; I can’t get enough of you. Should we continue this in a shower?”

“No!” Jiang Yuyan immediately replied without waiting for a moment.

“Haha! We will keep that for later.” Lu Qiang teased her again and let her go from his hold.

Both went back to the bedroom. Lu Qiang took Jiang Yuyan to her wardrobe and said, “This is all yours, your wardrobe!”

Jiang Yuyan nodded then Lu Qiang moved to his side of the wardrobe. He took out a set of clothes for him and said, “You can use this bathroom, I’ll use it in another room and come downstairs for the breakfast once you get ready.” He then left the bedroom.

Jiang Yuyan observed the wardrobe and saw wardrobe was full of expensive and branded dresses. She opened drawers and saw so many sets of beautiful lingerie inside it. Everything there was what a woman needed. She felt like she had been living here for a long time.

She chose a simple, blue color knee-length, short sleeved dress; as she thought it was the most comfortable dress in that wardrobe. She then took out a set of lingerie then closed the door of a wardrobe and moved to the bathroom.

She got ready and went downstairs; where Lu Qiang was waiting for her, sitting on the sofa and going through his tablet.

Lu Qiang looked at her. He put the tablet back on the center table and stepped in her direction.

He smiled and said while observing her from head to toe, “Since yesterday, I am feeling like rewarding that showroom manager for sending these beautiful clothes for you... or... is it in other way round? Should I charge him for giving a chance

to the clothes from his store to be wear by my beautiful woman?”

Jiang Yuyan blushed and smiled. Then both moved towards the dining table. When they reached there, everything was ready and butler was standing there with two servants on his side.

Jiang Yuyan observed the food and was surprised to see that everything there was what she liked to eat. She looked at the butler who just replied to her gaze with a polite smile. She then looked at Lu Qiang who smiled and moved to pull back one chair for her to sit.

Jiang Yuyan sat down in the chair and Lu Qiang sat in the chair beside her. The servants started to serve a food and left the two alone in the dining room.

When Jiang Yuyan saw everyone left, she asked, “How did he, I mean the butler know, what I like?”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “It’s his job to know, what both of us like.”

“But, if I just came here for the first time then how?” Jiang Yuyan asked again as she was curious to know it.

“He has been here, since the time I planned to build this house. He knows everything like; why I built this house and what you mean to me! Just be comfortable around him.”

“Okay! But, he even knows what I like to eat.....” She was still was not out of her shock.

Lu Qiang held the small piece of meat in chopsticks and put it in her mouth while she was talking and said, “I told you, it’s his job and he knows you, as much as the servants should know about their owner. Now eat, your food is getting cold.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and started to eat the food in her dish while Lu Qiang was filling her dish with more and more food.

Once they finished the breakfast and spent some time together, both left their place in a car and moved in the direction of Jiang residence.

When they reached there, Lu Qiang unlocked the door and Jiang Yuyan was looking at him and said sarcastically, “I think this house belongs to you now too, since you know the password and can enter the house whenever you want.”

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said while opening the door, “That’s a good idea. Till the time you are away from me, I’ll come here, whenever I feel like to see you in the middle of the night.” Then both entered inside.

Jiang Yuyan was about to reply him but, stopped when she saw the mess in front of her, in the living room.

Lu Qiang also felt surprised when he saw the bad condition of the living room. Each and everything in the living room was thrown somewhere else from their places and the cushions on the sofa were thrown on the floor. Some were even torn apart.

Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to stay back and he moved inside to check the room. What he saw further, he saw something shocking.

105 Sleeping Beauties!!

Lu Qiang walked towards the semi-circular sofa in the living room while Jiang Yuyan was standing near the entrance of the living room since Lu Qiang asked her to not enter inside.

When Lu Qiang reached near the sofa, he saw something that made him sigh in frustration. He pinched the space between his eyebrows and said, “These morons.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at him and asked while standing in her place, “What’s there?”

Lu Qiang looked at her and said, “Trust me you won’t want to see it.”

Jiang Yuyan heard this and walked towards the sofa. She too was shocked and embarrassed to see the scene in front of her eyes.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were sleeping on the floor but that was not the problem. They were both were shirtless and Jiang Yang was sleeping with his head resting on Lu Feng’s arm. He circled his arm around Lu Feng’s chest and his one leg was resting on Lu Feng’s thighs.

Lu Feng was sleeping with his body straight and facing towards ceiling.

Dozens of beer bottles were scattered everywhere; it looked like both drank till they knocked out. The condition of the living room was totally opposite to its stylish look. It looked like a zoo with two animals sleeping peacefully after creating a mess.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan both were speechless.

Lu Qiang called both of their names but both were in a deep sleep. Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, “I’ll be back in a moment.”

Lu Qiang moved to the kitchen and in a minute he returned back with the jar filled with cold water in his hands. He

walked towards both the sleeping beauties and poured water on their faces.

When the cold water touched their faces, both woke up in a shock and said at the same time, “What the heck”.

Then, they tried to open their eyes while cleaning the water from their faces and rubbing their sleepy eyes with the palms. Both were still sleeping on the floor and looked at Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan. Lu Feng was still trying to overcome this sudden shock.

When Jiang Yang saw them he smiled and said in a lazy voice, “Both of you had a fun last night, why are you disturbing us?”

On hearing these bold words from her brother, Jiang Yuyan was taken aback. She looked at Lu Qiang awkwardly.

Lu Qiang noticed Jiang Yuyan’s reaction, He looked at Jiang Yang and threw the remaining water in the jar on his face with a force and said, “Get back to your senses.”

When Lu Feng saw Jiang Yuyan, he immediately pushed Jiang Yang away from him, got up and sat in his place on the floor. Then, he started to search for his shirt while sitting down and turning his head in all directions. He felt awkward being shirtless in front of her.

Jiang Yang smiled, when he saw Lu Feng’s embarrassed face and said in a teasing way, “Darling relax, I’ll send both of them out from here. Let’s continue what we were doing earlier.”

Lu Feng gave him a killer gaze and continued searching for his shirt.

Lu Qiang picked up both of their shirts from the corner of the sofa and threw it on them.

Lu Feng picked up his own shirt and threw the other one on Jiang Yang’s face. Jiang Yang got up and removed the shirt from his face.

Lu Feng put on his shirt and got up from the floor but fell back on the sofa since he had hangover and his head was spinning

around. He somehow buttoned up his shirt and sat on the sofa, leaning forward, holding his head with both hands.

Jiang Yuyan walked towards the kitchen to make something to lessen their hangovers.

Jiang Yang too got up from the floor, put on his shirt and sat lazily in the sofa while holding his head and said, “Man, it’s hurting badly.”

Lu Feng looked at him and said, “Mine too!”

Lu Qiang too went to kitchen to help Jiang Yuyan, but she already finished making a drink for them. She poured it in a glass and was ready to carry it in a tray. Lu Qiang took that tray from her hand and walked in the living room. Jiang Yuyan too followed him back.

Lu Qiang gave the drink to each of them, put the tray on the center table and sat back on the sofa with his legs crossed and one arm on armrest. Jiang Yuyan was standing at a distance from them and was looking at the mess in the living room with a worried expression which Lu Qiang didn’t fail to notice.

Once they finished the drink, Lu Qiang looked at both of them and asked, “Are you guys feeling better now?”

Both nodded in a sink while putting back those empty glasses in a tray and said, “Thanks!”

Jiang Yuyan stepped forward, picked up the tray and left to the kitchen to put it back.

Lu Qiang’s expressions then changed from normal to serious one. He looked at both of them and said in a firm voice, “Ok! Now, both of you can start cleaning this room.”

Both were surprised to hear it and said together while looking at Lu Qiang, “What?”

Lu Qiang was carrying same serious expressions on his face. He signaled them to look around in the room while himself looking around.

Both followed Lu Qiang’s gaze and felt even more surprised to see the mess in the living room.

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng and asked, “What! When did we do this?”

Lu Feng too was in a shock and was still observing a room. Then, after a moment he replied, “I don’t know.”

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng and asked with fake scared expressions on his face, “Tell me the truth. You didn’t take the advantage of me as you were blinded by my beauty, last night.”

Lu Feng felt annoyed and said while pressing his temples with his both hands, “Yeah, I was too blinded by it! I couldn’t even do anything with you. My eyes are hurting now.”

Jiang Yang smiled and said teasingly, “Ohhh! Let me check my darling’s eyes.”

As Jiang Yang raised his hands in the direction of Lu Feng’s face, Lu Feng brushed off his hands and said, “F**k Off!”

106 Be My Bath buddy!!

Lu Qiang looked at both of them annoyingly and said, “Hurry up or I’ll throw both of you out of this house, in your messed up condition,”

Both looked at Lu Qiang and got up from the sofa to clean the mess they had created last night.

Both started to collect all the beer bottles from the floor first. Just then Jing Yuyan returned back from the kitchen and saw her brother and friend were picking up the bottles from the floor. She looked at Lu Qiang and asked in a mute, ‘What’s happening?’

Lu Qiang shook his head as saying ‘Nothing’ and asked her to sit beside him on the sofa by signaling the space beside him with his finger. Jiang Yuyan sat beside him, giving him a questioning look, but Lu Qiang replied with just a simple smile.

It took almost half hour for both of them to clean the whole place. Both looked tired and sat back in the sofa.

Lu Qiang looked at both of them and said in a strict way, “Who asked you to sit? Go and have bath first.”

Both looked at him but didn’t say anything. They got up from the sofa and walked in the direction of stairs quietly.

Both entered into Jiang Yang’s room. Jiang Yang walked towards the wardrobe while Lu Feng was observing a room. His sight stopped at the guitar hanging on one of the wall in the room.

Jiang Yang suddenly said while going through his wardrobe, “Lu Feng, didn’t it remind of our childhood days today?”

Lu Feng averted his sight from guitar and looked at Jiang Yang whose back was facing towards him. Lu Feng replied, “Yes! It did.”

It was not like both of them were scared of Lu Qiang; it was something special between these friends. One can order around with full right on them and others will listen to it. They liked the way Lu Qiang was ordering them just like he used to do in their childhood days to make Jiang Yuyan happy.

“It is good to be back together again.” Said Jiang Yang and pulled out two sets of clothes from the wardrobe.

Lu Feng just nodded and said, “Hmmm!”

Jiang Yang turned around, handed him over the one set of clothes and said in a teasing way, “Do you want to be my bath buddy?”

Lu Feng took the clothes from his hands and said annoyingly, “Get lost!”

Jiang Yang smiled and said without being affected by Lu Feng’s annoyed reaction, “I thought you would rub my back darling.”

“Do you want me to call Lu Qiang to rub your back?” Lu Feng frowned and replied.

“Haha! No way. That handsome monster is fine with my sister only.”

Then, he moved towards the bathroom and said, “I’ll be back in a moment. Till then you can continue looking at that guitar or if you want you can play it like before”

Lu Feng had taken a back and asked, “Do you have eyes behind your head?” He was surprised to see how Jiang Yang knew, what was in his mind.

Jiang Yang replied, “Darling! I still know you better than anyone else.” He said and entered inside the bathroom while smiling pleasantly.

Lu Feng continued to look at the guitar on the wall. He smiled after a while; like he remembered about something nice.

Jiang Yang and Lu Feng came downstairs, once they had a bath and got ready. Lu Qiang already ordered a food for them since he knew these two must be starving after emptying out the litres of alcohol in their stomachs last night.

Jiang Yuyan called both of them to the dining table and all four sat there. Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan didn't eat anything since they were full. They just sat there to give these two a company.

Jiang Yuyan looked at her brother and asked, "Brother Yang, why did you drink so much and why didn't you come to celebrate my birthday?"

Jiang Yang had one bite and said, "Do you really feel that I should have come there?" He then looked at Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang didn't say anything and maintained his usual cold expressions on his face.

Jiang Yuyan replied, "Yes! You should have come there."

Jiang Yang smiled with one corner of his lips up and said, "If I.. actually ..we" He pointed at Lu Feng and said, "If we had come there, then you would not have been able to have a fun."

Lu Feng didn't say anything and just continued eating the food in his dish with his head lowered down.

Jiang Yuyan asked with a questioning look, "Fun?"

Lu Qiang sighed and looked at Jiang Yang because he knew where this conversation was heading to.

Jiang Yang ignored Lu Qiang and looked at his sister and said with a mischievous smile on his face, "Looks like you enjoyed your birthday a lot. The scarf around your neck, in this hot weather explains a lot."

Jiang Yuyan coughed and couldn't say anything. Lu Qiang immediately passed her a glass of water and gave a killer gaze to Jiang Yang. She was still coughing and her face was red. Lu Qiang patted her back lightly.

Before leaving the duplex after a breakfast, Jiang Yuyan wrapped a scarf around her neck as there were red marks on it. Her dress was covering her neckline around her collarbone and shoulders but still the marks on her neck were visible.

Jiang Yang smiled even widely and said while looking at Lu Qiang, "I was just wondering, isn't she feeling hot to wrap a scarf around her neck, nothing else."

Jiang Yuyan didn't replied but Lu Qiang did.

He replied straight forwardly, "Do you want me to remove this scarf from her neck to make her feel better?"

Jiang replied, "No! I didn't said that. She is looking pretty like this."

Lu Qiang still continued to shut Jiang Yang's mouth, "If you are that curious to see my skills with your sister, then I have no problem to remove this scarf and show it to you."

"Cough**Cough!" Now it was a time for Jiang Yang to cough.

He had a sip of water and replied, "Nono! I am just thinking about to gift her best quality concealer so that she doesn't have to suffer from wrapping her neck with a scarf in such hot weather.

Lu Qiang replied, "You should have done that before."

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Qiang teasingly and said, "My bad." and smiled

Jiang Yuyan didn't know what to say to these shameless men in her life. One was her love and other one was her brother. She just preferred to stay quiet.

Lu Feng too continued to eat quietly. He was used to Lu Qiang's bold answers with his grandpa and now he was getting used to the shameless Jiang Yang

107 My Darling Is Angry!

Jiang Yuyan was feeling too embarrassed because of the bold words of Lu Qiang and her brother. Her face looked flushed. She was more embarrassed because Lu Feng was there too. Though, they were childhood friends, she was not that friendly with him, after so many years. There was certain line of hesitation between them. She looked at Lu Feng for a moment, but he was just busy eating, with his face lowered down. She felt relieved that he was not paying attention to what these two blatant people were saying and that he was not looking at her.

Lu Feng also noticed the scarf around her neck and it was obvious for him to understand why she was wearing it. He could just ignore it, but when Jiang Yang pointed it out; he couldn't help but turn blind eye to it and pretend to not notice it. He didn't want Jiang Yuyan to feel embarrassed in front of him, so he just decided to pay attention to the food and he didn't look at her even once. Though, somewhere in his heart, he felt a pain, but he knew he could handle it. Actually, he knew he had to face it and bear with it.

Once they finished the food, all three helped Jiang Yuyan to clean the dining table and dishes since the servants were still on holiday. After that, they sat on the living room sofa; in four different places, some distance away from each other.

Lu Feng remembered that he hasn't wished Jiang Yuyan 'happy birthday' yet. He looked at her and called her name, "Yuyan!"

Jiang Yuyan looked back at him and said, "Umm?"

He looked into her eyes, which he believed, were the most beautiful part of her face. He smiled lightly and said, "Happy birthday!"

Jiang Yuyan smiled back and said, "Thank you."

Lu Feng felt glad to see her smiling. He wanted to keep looking at her, but he immediately averted his sight and looked

at his cell phone. He knew when to stop himself and not go for something which didn't belong to him.

Jiang Yang didn't fail to notice Lu Feng's reaction. He said, "Wooo! Her birthday was yesterday, and you are just now wishing her happy birthday. What kind of a friend are you?"

Lu Feng looked at Jiang Yang and replied, "I would have done it earlier, if you hadn't made me drink so much and put me in an awkward condition."

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with questioning expressions and asked, "What awkward condition? Are you talking about being shirtless?"

Lu Feng just pressed his temple one more time and didn't answer him, but Jiang Yang continued.

"What's to feel awkward in that? We were shirtless, but our pants were still on! Furthermore, we are childhood friends so you can be in front of her in a single piece even."

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng replied at the same time to Jiang Yang, "Don't you dare say such thing again"

Jiang Yang looked at both of them, but he only got the killer gazes in reply from them. When he looked at Jiang Yuyan, she did the same. Jiang Yuyan was embarrassed and just felt like to run from there.

Jiang Yang laughed and said, "Single piece! I mean to say, if my darling wears a single piece nighty for me, then my sister won't mind it. What could be more embarrassing for you than it?"

Lu Feng was just ready to get up and was thinking about to hit him, just then Jiang Yang said, "My darling is angry, come to me, I'll calm you down."

Lu Feng stopped and sat back in his seat, while Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were trying to hide their smiles.

Lu Feng got up from his seat and said, "I need to go now."

Jiang Yang suddenly remembered about something and said, "Lu Feng, our cars are still in a parking lot of that pub."

Last night both were drunk. So, to avoid driving they hired a cab to return back to home. Jiang Yang dragged Lu Feng along with him. Before returning back home, they stopped at the supermarket and bought as many beer bottles as they could. When they reached home, they finished the beer till the last drop and created a mess in the living room.

Lu Feng looked at him and said, "I'll hire a cab."

Lu Qiang heard him and said, "No need, I will drop you wherever you want to go."

Lu Feng looked at him and replied, "I don't want you to be late for your work."

Jiang Qiang said, "I have already informed in the office that I'll be late."

Before Lu Feng could say anything further to turn down Lu Qiang's offer, Jiang Yang said, "What office and what work? When we are together, nobody is allowed to think about work."

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng didn't say anything as they agreed to what Jiang Yang said.

"Lu Feng you are going with Lu Qiang that's final! Otherwise I will personally see my darling off to his work place to ensure his safety, what do you say?"

Lu Feng immediately replied, "No! I will go with Lu Qiang."

Just then, Jiang Yang got a message on his cell phone from the hospital and got up from the sofa in hurry and said, "Sorry guys, I need to go to the hospital immediately. Lu Qiang, first you have to drop me to my work place then you can drop Lu Feng."

On hearing this, other three laughed while looking at Jiang Yang. Jiang Yang realized what just happened and said with a smile on his face, "Okay! Okay! I got it. What I said earlier was not for me, as being late to my work can cost someone's life."

Lu Qiang too got up from his seat and said, "We got it, now let's go."

Jiang Yang looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, “You have to be alone today too.”

Jiang Yuyan said, “No problem! I will finish my work.” She was thinking about her painting which she left incomplete last time.

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Qiang and said, “We will be waiting outside.”

108 Good Luck Kiss!!

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang moved ahead leaving Lu Qiang behind. Once they went out of the door, Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and stepped towards her. Jiang Yuyan could guess what was going to come next and her face already turned red.

Lu Qiang smiled and said teasingly while getting closer to her, “I haven’t done anything and your face is already red.”

Jiang Yuyan felt shy and averted her gaze from him. She was about to take one step back from him, but Lu Qiang immediately grabbed her by her waist and said, “Your husband is going for work. Don’t you think he deserves a good luck kiss?”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and gave him a peck on his lips and looked at him as asking ‘Is it fine?’

Lu Qiang shook his head and kissed her in his own way. After few moments, he left Jiang Yuyan breathless because of his passionate kiss. She was breathing heavily and looked tired.

Lu Qiang looked at her and asked, “Are you okay?”

She nodded and said, “I am fine. Now go back to work. You are already late.”

Lu Qiang kissed on her forehead and said, “Okay! Just take care and call me if you need anything.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded again and said goodbye to him.

When Lu Qiang went outside, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were waiting for him near the elevator.

The moment Lu Qiang reached to the elevator, Jiang Yang smiled and said, “C’mon man, at least make sure to wipe the traces of your passionate moments on your lips after you kiss a girl.”

This time Lu Qiang didn’t reply him. He just pulled out a handkerchief and cleaned the lip gloss on the corner of his lips.

Lu Feng too smiled a little upon hearing Jiang Yang's bold but funny words but tried to hide it.

Elevator arrived and all three entered into it. Once they reached to the parking lot, they walked towards Lu Qiang's car.

When Lu Feng was about to open the door for back passenger seat, Jiang Yang immediately opened the back passenger seat door on other side and sat inside with his legs stretched along to the whole seat.

He looked at Lu Feng and said, "I need to stretch my legs; they are hurting. You can sit in front seat."

Lu Feng frowned and closed the door with bang. He went and sat in the front seat. Lu Qiang was already sitting in a driver seat and was ready to start a car. He noticed what Jiang Yang did and smiled. He knew, what he was up to and didn't have any problem with that.

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously then looked at Lu Feng's frowning face from the side and murmured to himself with a sigh, "Need to do one more patch up here."

Jiang Yang knew Lu Feng will definitely sit in the back passenger seat, but he wanted him to sit beside Lu Qiang. He wanted both of them to get along well, like in the past, but he still couldn't figure out what exactly happened between them. It's not like they didn't talk to each other, but they were not comfortable with each other like in their childhood days.

On the way to the hospital, Jiang Yang asked to Lu Qiang.

"Lu Qiang, have you decided about Jiang Yuyan's stay? I mean where is she going to stay, in Lu Mansion or university dormitory?"

Lu Qiang replied while driving and focusing on the road, "We haven't got the time to talk about it but she will stay in Lu Mansion for sure."

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously and said, "I know, how can both of you get the time talk about it when you were busy with other important things."

Lu Qiang replied shamelessly, “Hmm! You are right.”

Lu Feng was surprised to hear this. He looked at both of them and asked, “Lu Mansion?”

Jiang Yang didn't answer and waited for Lu Qiang to reply to him. Which is exactly what happened, Lu Qiang replied to Lu Feng's question.

“Yes! She is going to stay in Lu Mansion.”

Lu Feng replied with just, “Hmm!”

First Lu Qiang dropped Jiang Yang to the hospital since it was near. Jiang Yang was in a hurry. He just said goodbye and moved to the hospital.

Lu Qiang then asked Lu Feng, “Where should I drop you?”

Lu Feng replied casually, “Anywhere, where you find suitable.”

Lu Qiang started to drive and asked while looking towards the road, “Should I drop you to your place.”

Lu Feng sighed and said, “Don't tell me, you are still spying on me.”

Lu Qiang replied, “No! I stopped it when we talked about it last time.”

Lu Feng: “That's good! I know you are worried about me, but trust me you don't need to.”

Lu Qiang: “Hmm! I know.”

Lu Feng: “By the way, I sold that place and bought a different one.”

Lu Qiang: “Don't worry! I won't make you to sell this place again. I am not going to track you again”

Lu Feng: “Thanks!”

The atmosphere in the car suddenly became silent, so Lu Feng asked to break this silent.

Lu Feng: “I am glad that you and Yuyan are together. How is she doing?”

Lu Qiang: “Hmm! You should ask her personally. Don’t be so isolated.”

Lu Feng: “I will try.”

Lu Qiang: “You and Jiang Yang should have come celebrate her birthday.”

Lu Feng smiled and asked: “Aren’t you glad that we didn’t come?”

Lu Qiang laughed a little and said, “Yes! I am but, I am asking it for you people.”

Lu Feng: “Don’t think about others, now it’s time for you to think about yourself. All these years, you only lived for others now it’s your turn to live your life.”

Lu Qiang Looked at him and asked, “What about you?”

Lu Feng: “I am already living a life that I wanted to.”

Lu Qiang didn’t say anything further as he didn’t know what to say? He just thought while concentrating on the road, ‘I wish, I knew what happened to you suddenly. I know, you alone are suffering for all these years but you won’t say it to anyone. What was the reason. I wish things could be like before and us share everything with each other. I wish to share your pain with you, brother!’

At the same time when Lu Qiang was immersed in his thoughts, Lu Feng looked outside of the car window and thought while staring towards the roadside.

‘I am sorry Lu Qiang that I left you alone when you needed me the most, but that was the only way and I had no other option. I know you want to know what happened to me suddenly, but I am sorry I can’t tell you this. In return for all of your efforts to handle our family, I can only stay away from you. I too wish to be with you like we were before but I am afraid that it’s too late and not possible now. I can only wish you happiness in your life, brother!’

109 Take It As My Last Wish!!

Lu Qiang continued to drive in the direction of his office, immersed in his own thoughts. Lu Feng too was busy staring outside of the car window, thinking about something.

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng who was looking in the opposite direction and called his name, “Lu Feng!”

Lu Feng came out of his thoughts and looked at Lu Qiang and said, “Hmm?”

Lu Qiang replied while looking towards road, “Come to the office today. You haven’t been there in many years.”

Lu Feng sighed and said, “I don’t want to.”

Lu Qiang asked, “Why?”

Lu Feng closed his eyes and rested his head back in the chair then replied “Because, I am not interested in our family business. I want to do something on my own.”

Lu Qiang: “Nobody is stopping you from doing that and coming to the office won’t affect it.”

Lu Feng: “Still, I don’t want to.”

Lu Qiang: “One day, if something happens to me, then you will be the one to take responsibility of everything.”

Lu Feng: “Since when have you started to talk bullshit?”

Lu Qiang: “This is the first time.”

Lu Feng: “Then I have one more reason for not coming to the office.”

Lu Qiang: “What’s that?”

Lu Feng opened his eyes and turned his face to look at Lu Qiang and said, “I won’t come to the office and will never take any interest in the work. This way, you will always remember,

there is no one to take care of our family and business after you and you will always protect your own life for their sake.”

Lu Qiang didn't know how to reply to this. He just kept silent and focused on driving.

Lu Feng continued, “One more thing. Now you have someone, whose happiness depends on you, so you have to protect yourself even more. If you ever leave her alone, I'll never forgive you.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “I won't.”

Lu Feng then asked Lu Qiang to drop him at the next intersection on the highway. Lu Qiang stopped the car at the corner, dropped him and said before moving ahead.

“Lu Feng, let's get along with each other just like before. I've missed my brother, my best friend all these years. As things are coming back to me again, I want everything back like before.”

Lu Feng listened to him while standing outside of the front passenger seat door and was looking at him through window, which glass was lowered down but didn't react.

Upon seeing no reaction from Lu Feng, Lu Qiang said again, “Take it as my last wish.”

Once Lu Qiang finished his last lines, Lu Feng sighed and moved from his place at the front side of the car, towards the driver seat door. His face looked angry. He opened the door and said in quite loud and angry tone, “Get out of this damn car.”

Lu Qiang was taken aback to see him like this. He could see that Lu Feng was angry. He unfastened the seat belt, opened the door and got out of the car.

As soon as he got out of the car, Lu Feng closed the door back with a bang. Then, before giving Lu Qiang a chance ask what happened, Lu Feng punched him hard in his stomach and said, “What did you just say? Last wish ha? Then I will make you to ask for it.”

Lu Qiang covered his stomach with his hands out of reflex, of feeling a pain caused by the punch, but didn't say anything to Lu Feng.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang who was in a pain and said again "I'll beat you to death first; then you can ask me for your last wish, you Moron."

Lu Feng then stepped towards him, held him by his collar and said, "Do you want me to hit you again or was one punch enough to bring you back to your senses?"

Lu Qiang smiled and said, "I don't mind to get beaten by you, as long as you talk to me and stay beside me."

On hearing Lu Qiang's words, Lu Feng let go of Lu Qiang and his expressions changed from angry to calm. He closed his eyes for a moment, sighed deeply and said to Lu Qiang after opening his eyes, "I don't want to hear that again."

Lu Qiang replied, "Okay! Are you done?"

Lu Feng nodded and looked in the other direction.

Lu Qiang then straightened up his collar and said while looking at Lu Feng, "Sorry brother, but this is going to hurt you really bad."

Lu Feng looked back at him with a surprised expression to understand what he said, but before he could even react, Lu Qiang hit him in the stomach too and said after blowing on his fist, "Actually, I wanted to punch you in a face but I don't want our family to see it and worry for you."

Lu Feng held his stomach with his hands and he was in a pain too.

Lu Qiang looked at him and said again, "This is for keeping yourself away from me and behaving like a stranger for all these years."

Lu Feng was in a pain but smiled and said, "Accepted!"

Lu Qiang then walked towards him and held him with his collar and said, "Dare to go away from me again and I'll beat you to the death for sure."

Lu Feng looked into his eyes, smiled and replied, “I don’t mind to get beaten by you, but I won’t go away from you afterwards. I am tired of being a stranger to you.”

Lu Qiang let go of Lu Feng’s collar and hugged him tightly. Lu Feng too hugged him back.

The road did not have much traffic, but the few cars that were passing by; were looking at them as they continued to drive by.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng noticed it and let go of each other.

Lu Qiang: “Let’s get away from here.”

Lu Feng: “Yeah! Or these people will think something is going on between us.”

Both sat in the car then Lu Qiang asked Lu Feng, “Do you have any work to do today?”

Lu Feng shook his head and said, “Nope! My work hours start in the evening.”

Lu Qiang fastened his seat belt and said, “Then let’s go somewhere.”

Lu Feng: “Don’t you have work to do?”

Lu Qiang, “No work is more important than you.” Then he started the car, took U-turn, and drove in the direction from opposite to his office.

110 It's Time To Change!!

In Jiang residence...

Jiang Yuyan was alone once the men left the house. She watched television for an hour then went to her room. She was just about to enter in her painting room, when the doorbell rang. She came downstairs and moved to the door to check who it was.

Jiang Yuyan opened the door and she couldn't help but feel shocked. The person in front of her was carrying a beautiful flower bouquet in his hands. He smiled and said, while passing that bouquet to Jiang Yuyan, "Happy belated birthday my love."

Jiang Yuyan was still surprised. She replied after a moment, "Thank you Grandpa Lu!"

Elder Lu smiled and said, "Are you going to make me stand here at the door?"

Jiang Yuyan came out of her shock upon hearing these words from elder Lu and said, "Grandpa Lu! Come.. Come inside, please!"

Elder Lu suddenly decided to visit Jiang Yuyan. He wanted to visit her on her birthday, the day before, but he knew Lu Qiang might have planned something and didn't want to ruin it. He decided to visit her the next day with a plan in his mind.

Elder Lu entered inside the house. Jiang Yuyan made him sit on the sofa in the living room. She went to the kitchen and brought a cold drink for him and joined him on the sofa.

Elder Lu accepted the drink and asked, "How have you been doing dear?"

Jiang Yuyan smiled and replied, "I am doing good grandpa. How are you?"

Elder Lu suddenly became dramatic. He took a sip of a drink slowly then sighed with a sad expression on his face and said,

“Just counting my last days.”

Jiang Yuyan felt worried by his reply and asked, “Why are you saying this grandpa? You are still very young.”

Elder Lu again replied with sad tone, “You are right dear, I am young at heart but this body is old now and don’t know when it will betray me.”

Jiang Yuyan felt sad on hearing these words from him and said, “Grandpa don’t talk like this. You know how much we all love you.”

Elder Lu was getting expected replies from her. He made his face even sadder and said, “Nobody loves me or else they would have listen to whatever I said.”

Jiang Yuyan asked, “Hmm? Who dared to not listen to you?”

Elder Lu replied, “Everyone. All are same.”

Jiang Yuyan tried to cheer him and said, “No Grandpa, no one can defy you. You are very important to everyone.”

Elder Lu Suddenly changed his track and asked while raising his one eyebrow in a question, “Does that everyone include you?”

Jiang Yuyan replied with a confidence in her voice “Of course, Grandpa!”

Grandpa smiled pleasantly on hearing it from her and said, “Then come to the Lu Mansion and stay there with us.”

Jiang Yuyan felt trapped and couldn’t say anything after seeing the pleasant smile on his face, compared than those sad expressions. She didn’t realize what this sweet talking grandpa was trying to do. When she realized, it was already late.

She just thought, ‘Now I understand where you got all those skills, Lu Qiang!’”

Upon seeing no response from Jiang Yuyan, the smile on his face disappeared. He again made a sad face and said , “See! This is what I was talking about.”

Jiang Yuyan fumbled a little and said, “No! It’s not like that grandpa. I was....”

“Ohh! Then it’s good to see, at least someone still listens to this old man.” Before Jiang Yuyan could say anything, elder Lu stopped her from talking and said in a sad tone again.

Jiang Yuyan couldn’t say anything further other than agreeing to what he said. She nodded as saying ‘Yes!’

She knew what grandpa was trying to do and decided to play along. Moreover, she was ready to move into Lu Mansion. She was not worried about being with Lu Qiang like she was before, but grandpa didn’t let her say her part

Elder Lu saw her agreeing to his words and said emotionally. “I am glad that you are ready to come to Lu Mansion.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, “As long as you are happy grandpa.”

Jiang Yuyan was just wondering how quickly grandpa changed his expressions from happy to sad once again. She thought of him as a kid who could act in any way to fulfill his own demands. She couldn’t help but smile about his act.

Elder Lu smiled and said, “That’s why I call you ‘my love’. You are my obedient and the best grandchild.”

Jiang Yuyan just smiled on what he said.

Grandpa asked being excited to see how she got ready to come to Lu Mansion in a minute, “So when will you be ready to move in? I will personally come to pick you up.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “That, I have to discuss with brother Yang.”

“Jiang Yang? Haha! What is there to ask him? He is even more eager to send you to Lu Mansion.” Elder Lu was too happy with the thought of her coming to Lu Mansion that he didn’t realized what he was going to say.

Jiang Yuyan heard him and asked with a serious expression on her face, “So both of you planned this together?”

Elder Lu fumbled a little and thought about what he just said. He then replied, “What plan dear? He.. actually.. we are just worried about you as this city is still new to you.”

Jiang Yuyan still had that serious expression on her face and didn't say anything. She didn't want to let go of this opportunity to scare her over reacting grandpa.

Elder Lu felt worried with the thought of making her upset as she caught him. He smiled and said, "Don't be upset dear. I won't force you to come to Lu Mansion if you don't want to."

Jiang Yuyan replied with same serious expressions, "Who said I don't want to come to Lu Mansion?"

Grandpa Lu was surprised to hear this and said, "So you already decided to come to Lu Mansion before I even came here."

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "Yes!"

Elder Lu: "So, I did all this for nothing. Nobody told me about this."

Jiang Yuyan: "That's because I didn't tell anyone yet."

Elder Lu sighed and said, "It's fine, as long as you are coming to the mansion."

Then, elder Lu smiled and mumbled to himself, 'Finally, he proved he is my grandson and didn't fail to work his charm. Haha!'

Jiang Yuyan looked at grandpa and asked, "Did you say something?"

Elder Lu Replied, "I just said that I am so happy that you are going to live with us."

After some time elder Lu bid a farewell and Jiang Yuyan was again alone in the house. She went back to her painting room and looked at the painting she made days before which was still incomplete. Jiang Yuyan stood up in front of it and started to observe it. She had sad expressions on her face.

After few moments of continuous staring she sighed and said, "This will not do. Now it's a time to change."

Jiang Yuyan removed that painted canvas from the stand, rolled it and threw it in a dust bin. She then Put on a new

canvas on that stand and smiled to look at that white, fresh and empty canvas.

She put aside the already used painting brushes, colors, color tray from the table and brought everything fresh in there from the shelf's in the room. She stood in front of that canvas while observing it carefully then started her work. She mixed colors and started to paint with a pleasant smile on her face.

111 I Know, What's In Your Heart?

Lu Qiang drove his car towards the city limits.

Lu Feng Asked, "Where are we going?"

Lu Qiang replied, "I don't know."

Lu Feng didn't say anything and leaned back in his seat comfortably; not thinking about where they were going.

On the way to the city outskirts, Lu Qiang suddenly stopped the car in front of a roadside mini-supermarket. It was not occupied by many customers since it was not in the main city.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang and asked, "What happened?"

Lu Qiang looked back at him and said, "Get out of the car and go get some beer." He said while pointing towards the mini-supermarket.

Lu Feng looked at the mini-supermarket and then looked back at Lu Qiang and asked, "Do you want my liver to rot? I already drank a lot last night and its effect hasn't worn off yet."

Lu Qiang sighed and said as ordering him, "It's for me. Now, hurry up and bring as much as you can."

Lu Feng looked at him surprisingly and asked, "Huh? Are you sure?"

Lu Qiang nodded and replied, "Hmmm!"

Lu Feng got out of the car puzzled. He was surprised when Lu Qiang asked him to bring beer for him. Lu Qiang had a low tolerance for alcohol, so he always used to avoid it. Whenever he attended any party; he always accepted the drink and left it after taking one or two sips.

Lu Feng went to the mini-supermarket and bought a pack of six beers and returned back to the car.

Lu Qiang looked at the carton in Lu Feng's hands and asked with displeased look on his face, "Only this much?"

Lu Feng nodded and replied casually as not being affected by Lu Qiang's displeased look, "Well, they were short on stock."

Lu Feng sat in the car, fastened his seat belt and Lu Qiang drove off, speeding on the highway, towards the city outskirts. After an hour, Lu Qiang stopped the car at a deserted place; where both sides of the road were surrounded by the vast green land. Lu Qiang parked the car on one side and got out of it. Lu Feng did the same while carrying the carton of beer in his hands.

They walked for some distance on the green land and discovered there was a valley ahead. Both walked towards it and sat on a huge rock, which was under the shade of a tree, near the start of the valley.

The atmosphere was calm and the cool breeze, coming from the valley, was cooling down the effect of the summer heat.

Lu Qiang removed his jacket and put it on the rock. He then loosened his tie and undid the top two buttons of his shirt. Then, Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng and said, "Give me my beer."

Lu Feng passed him a bottle and kept the others with him.

Lu Qiang took the bottle, but still was not happy. He stared at Lu Feng for a moment.

Lu Feng understood. He took out the bottle opener from the carton and said, "My bad."

Lu Qiang then started to drink, looking at the other side of the valley.

Lu Feng also looked in the direction Lu Qiang was looking at and said, "I have never seen you drink, other than occasionally at parties, for all of these years."

Lu Qiang didn't look at him and replied while staring at the valley, "During all of these years, you were not beside me to handle the drunken me."

Lu Feng replied apologetically, "Sorry man!"

Lu Qiang smiled and said while looking at him, “See, what your absence made me miss.”

Lu Feng smiled and said, “Well, I guess, I should have brought all the beer bottles from that supermarket to make up for all these missing years, damn!”

Lu Qiang looked at him with his one eyebrow raised and said, “But you said... Ohh! I should have gone by myself.”

Lu Feng: “Next time, I’ll buy a huge carton for you, then drink to your heart’s content.”

Then, Lu Feng picked up a bottle from the carton in his hands, looked at it and said, “We are together after a long time, so this one deserves to go into my stomach.”

Lu Qiang: “Don’t even think about it. That’s mine.”

Lu Feng opened the lid and said, “Stop me if you can.” Then he immediately started to drink the beer.

Lu Qiang just smiled and let him drink the beer.

Both sat there looking at the other side of the valley and emptying the beer bottles in their stomach. They were enjoying the peaceful atmosphere there.

After a while Lu Qiang said, “Lu Feng!”

Lu Feng: “Hmm?”

Lu Qiang: “What happened nine years back, that you left my side?”

The expressions on Lu Feng’s face changed suddenly but he was thankful that Lu Qiang was looking ahead and not towards him. He was expecting this question from Lu Qiang but when he actually asked it, Lu Feng felt puzzled for some time.

Lu Feng immediately collected himself and replied, “What could have happened? I just changed the direction of my interest, it was only at that time I realized exactly what I wanted to do.”

Upon hearing this answer from Lu Feng, Lu Qiang laughed a little and said, “Liar! Still, a very bad liar.” He then paused for

a moment and said, “I want to know the real reason.”

Lu Feng knew, Lu Qiang will never fall for his reasoning but still tried to lie to avoid the question.

Lu Feng sighed and said, “Yes! There is a different reason but I want you to trust me and don’t ask me about it again. This is the first time I have ever asked you for something and I hope you won’t disappoint me.”

Lu Qiang respected his decision and didn’t ask it again and said, “Fine with, me as long as you won’t go away from me again.”

Lu Feng nodded and said, “I won’t. Just remember, do not show our closeness in front of others, especially my mother.”

Lu Qiang was surprised to listen this and asked, “Aunt Lu Hui?”

Lu Feng replied, “Yes! My mother, but please don’t ask why?”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Okay! As you wish!”

Lu Feng then smiled and said, “Jiang Yang! That idiot is still the same. I am happy that he came back.”

Lu Qiang too smiled and said, “Yes! His return brought everything between us back to normal.”

Lu Feng nodded and said, “That’s true. By the way, when are you going to marry? Yuyan is back and I can see, both of you are in love?”

Lu Qiang took a sip of beer, thought about something and replied while looking at the valley ahead, “Will you be ok, if I married to her this early?”

Lu Feng surprisingly looked at Lu Qiang and said, “What.. What do you mean? I’ll be happy for both of you.”

Lu Qiang didn’t look at him as what he was going to say further might make Lu Feng to feel awkward. He just took another sip of beer then said while looking at the valley, “I know what is in your heart.”

Lu Feng was taken aback on listening to it and said calmly, “Does it matter?”

Lu Qiang replied, "Everything that can hurt you, matters to me."

Lu Feng Didn't know what to say. He felt like short for words. He took a sip of beer and said while looking at the valley, "The only thing that should matter to us, is her happiness. Don't you think so?"

Lu Qiang nodded and replied. "Yes!"

Lu Feng then said again, "And you know better than anyone that her happiness is being with you."

Lu Qiang again nodded and said, "I guess so."

Lu Feng then looked at him, punched Lu Qiang on his arm near his shoulder and said while smiling, "So, don't think about useless things." He then laughed and said, "Idiot!"

Lu Qiang just looked at him and said, "Thank you."

Lu Feng then tried to change this serious mood and asked, "So tell me now, when you are going to marry, so that I can start the preparation now, after all it would be my brother's wedding."

Lu Qiang smiled and said, "Not this early. She is just nineteen and it would be early for her."

Lu Feng replied, "It would be for her, but you know our grandpa and his wish." He then smiled widely after remembering about his annoying grandpa.

Lu Qiang laughed and replied with a sigh, "Yes that's true. Hmm! Our Grandpa!"

Lu Qiang then paused for a while and said with serious expressions on his face while looking at the beer bottle in his hands, "Also, she has her own issues, so I want her to get out of it first."

Lu Feng knew, what Lu Qiang was talking about and said, "Hmm! You are right and I am sure, with your help she will soon overcome it."

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng surprisingly and asked, "Do you know about it?"

Lu Feng nodded and said, “Yes! Jiang Yang told me everything last night,”

Lu Qiang sighed and said, “So, everyone knows about it except for me.”

Lu Feng asked surprisingly, “Everyone?”

Lu Qiang replied, “Grandpa and my father.”

Lu Feng patted Lu Qiang’s shoulder and said, “She will tell you herself, have patience.”

Lu Qiang ran his one hand through his hairs and replied, “I am trying to”

Lu Feng: “Also, Jiang Yang was worried about how you will react, so he didn’t tell you, so when you will know about it, just maintain your rationality for Yuyan’s sake.”

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng while thinking ‘was it that bad?’ He looked back at the valley and suddenly felt restless and felt like going back to Jiang Yuyan. He didn’t say a word and had a sad expression on his face. He just continued to look at the valley blankly while drinking the beer from his bottle.

Lu Feng didn’t disturb him, instead, when he saw empty beer bottle in Lu Qiang’s hands, he took that bottle from his hands and passed him another bottle of Beer.

This continued till the last bottle of beer was emptied out. Lu Feng drank only two while all four had gone through Lu Qiang’s stomach. Lu Feng laughed and said, “It looks like your alcohol tolerance level has been improved.”

Just as Lu Feng said this, Lu Qiang was about to lost his balance from the rock. Lu Feng immediately held him and said, “Hmm! I was wrong. You are still the same.”

112 I Am Sorry, Yuyan!!

Lu Feng held Lu Qiang and patted his cheeks to wake him up. Lu Qiang was drunk, so he could only open his eyes half way.

Lu Feng looked at his half opened eyes and said, “Wake up man; just walk towards the car.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said in a drunken voice, “Carry me in your arms brother.” He closed his eyes and hugged Lu Feng; putting his body weight on him. They were still sitting on rocks. They sat there for a long while, talking about the things from their childhood and it was almost evening.

Lu Feng sighed and said, “I should have only bought one bottle.”

Lu Feng held Lu Qiang making sure not to let him fall. He picked up Lu Qiang’s jacket from the rock beside him and put it back on him. Somehow Lu Feng managed to make Lu Qiang stand, putting one arm on his shoulder then holding him by circling Lu Qiang’s waist from behind. Lu Feng walked towards the car holding him. It took him a lot of time to bring Lu Qiang back to the car, but he somehow managed it.

Since it was summer, Lu Feng sweated a lot and he felt like he was out of energy. He made Lu Qiang to sit in the front passenger seat and fastened his seatbelt. He then took the car keys from his pocket, closed the door and turned towards the driver seat.

Just as he was about to start the car, Lu Qiang started to mumble, “Yuyan! I am sorry, Yuyan!”

Lu Feng looked at him but didn’t try to wake him up. He drank water from the bottle in the car and started the car to get away from that place and to take Lu Qiang back to home. During the whole journey Lu Qiang kept mumbling Jiang Yuyan’s name while apologizing to her about something. Lu Feng continued to focus on driving and didn’t try to listen what Lu Qiang was saying.

Lu Feng drove towards the city, but decided not to take Lu Qiang to Lu mansion because he didn't want anyone to see them together. So, he took Lu Qiang to his place which was unknown to others.

Lu Feng has his own apartment somewhere in the outskirts of the city because he didn't want anyone to know about it. He took Lu Qiang there. It was a huge tower with luxurious flats. Lu Feng pulled out Lu Qiang from the car in a parking lot and carried him, like he carried him earlier, towards an elevator.

Lu Qiang was still murmuring Jiang Yuyan's name and something else, but Lu Feng was not able to hear it properly because he was busy carrying Lu Qiang's heavy body towards the elevator.

Before they could reach to elevator, Lu Feng halted and made Lu Qiang's hairs look messy and lowered them down towards his eyes. He then lowered his head down a little to hide his face.

Lu Qiang was a known person in an elite group of people; though he never exposed himself much. That particular residential tower had many rich people living in there, so Lu Feng didn't want anyone to recognize him, especially not in a drunk condition.

They got into the elevator with a few more people. Lu Feng tried to hide Lu Qiang's face by standing in the corner with him and making him look in other direction from the those people. Lu Qiang was still busy in murmuring Yuyan's name. Other people in the lift heard it and looked at them even more.

Lu Feng smiled awkwardly and said, "He just broke up with his girlfriend." Then he hugged Lu Qiang to hide his face and said, "It's okay my brother." Then, he pretended to console him.

When they reached their floor, Lu Feng dragged Lu Qiang out from the elevator towards the flat door. He unlocked the door and dragged him inside towards the bed. Both fell down on the bed, as Lu Feng lost his balance and was too much tired to handle himself. He laid down beside Lu Qiang for few moments to catch a breath.

Lu Feng was about to get up from the bed just then he heard what Lu Qiang was murmuring to himself again. This time it was clearer. it was might be because he was lying in a bed. His voice sounded more painful than it was before coming back to the Lu Feng's apartment.

“Yuyan, I...I am sorry!... I couldn't be by your side when you were suffering in a pain... I am sorry!... I should have come to you but I didn't... I am sorry!... I even don't know what happened to you... I am sorry!

Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang's face. His expressions were painful and tears were rolling down from the corners of his both eyes. He was continuously saying sorry to Jiang Yuyan, for so many reasons. Lu Feng felt hurt to see Lu Qiang like this.

Lu Feng didn't remember seeing Lu Qiang cry ever, not even in their childhood, as long as he could remember the past. Lu Qiang was a strong minded person. He never cried, not even in the worst situation of his life, instead he preferred to face everything without wasting time on crying. He had been like this since he was a child.

Lu Feng knew him better than anyone else, even though they were apart from each other for years. Watching Lu Qiang like this was painful for him too, but he could understand him.

Lu Feng could understand why he was like this. He could understand why he suddenly chose to drink; when he never liked it before and always hated to get drunk? He could understand exactly what was bothering him?

Lu Feng got out from the bed. He removed Lu Qiang's shoes and his jacket then tucked him in a bed properly. Still Lu Qiang was murmuring the things about Yuyan. Lu Feng left him alone because he knew Lu Qiang wanted him to be and that's why he drank and left himself to handle by Lu Feng.

Lu Feng went to the bathroom for shower. When he came back, he saw Lu Qiang was sleeping soundly and the murmuring had stopped. He went to the bed, looked at him with a smile and said, Idiot!”

He then moved to his wardrobe and was about to pull out clothes from it, he heard Lu Qiang's cell phone ring which was in his jacket. He took out the cell phone from the jacket and smiled to look at the caller's name. He immediately received the call and said, "Speak!"

Jiang Residence..

In the evening, Jiang Yang came back to home. He saw, the entire apartment was quiet, like nobody was home. He walked upstairs towards Jiang Yuyan's room. When he entered in her room, he saw the door of the painting room was open.

He stepped inside the painting room and saw, Jiang Yuyan was lying on the couch in the room with her apron on, which was covered with many colors of paint. Jiang Yuyan's hands and face were covered in the paint as well. It looked like she by mistake touched her hands to her face and ended up with those paint marks.

Jiang Yang moved towards the painting she just made. It was not complete, but he could clearly understand what she was drawing on the canvas. He realized it was not the painting she made last time. It was something very different. Jiang Yang touched the painting's corner, smiled and said, "Thank you Lu Qiang."

Just as Jiang Yang was about to move back towards Jiang Yuyan, his sight fell on the rolled canvas in the dustbin. He went near dustbin and took out the canvas roll. He opened it and as per his expectations, it was the painting she was making last time. He rolled it and put it back in the dustbin.

Jiang Yang then walked towards Jiang Yuyan, who was in a deep sleep. He loosened her apron to remove it from her. After removing the apron and putting it aside, Jiang Yang carried her towards her bedroom in his arms. He put her in bed and covered her in a quilt up to her stomach.

Then Jiang Yang moved to the bathroom, brought out a water pot and napkin. He cleaned the colors from Jiang Yuyan's face with the wet napkin and then he cleaned her hands. He put

back the water pot and napkin in the bathroom, then came back towards her.

Jiang Yang leaned down to kiss her on forehead and said with a smile after a kiss on her forehead, “Still a kid. Hope this kid and her playmate will always be happy together and forever!”

Jinag Yang switched off the lights in the room and closed the door and then went to his own room.

As Jiang Yang reached his room, he dialed Lu Qiang’s number. When the call got received, he heard Lu Feng’s voice. He then asked surprisingly, “Lu Feng?”

Lu Feng replied, “Yes!”

113 I Am In Trouble!!

Jiang Yang was surprised to hear Lu Feng's voice coming from the other end of the line instead of Lu Qiang. He checked his cell phone's screen to see if he had dialed Lu Feng's number by mistake, but to his surprise it was right number. He held the cell phone back to his ear and asked in disbelief, "Are you with Lu Qiang?" Lu Feng replied, "Yes! Actually, he is with me at my place." Jiang Yang was really surprised to hear this. He wanted these brothers to get along, but didn't expect the things to happen this fast. The way the two brothers were strangers with each other, Jiang Yang thought, it will take time to reconcile for these two. Jiang Yang asked, "So both of you have been together since you left me." Lu Feng laughed and replied, "Why? Are you jealous that your darling is with other man?" Jiang Yang didn't expect Lu Feng to say this, but as he heard it, he understood both had reconciled their differences and are together now. Also, Lu Feng's voice sounded too happy. Jiang Yang replied, "Haha! No, I am not, because I know Lu Qiang's heart only beats for my sister." Lu Feng sighed and replied, "Yes! You are right. Even in his sleep he was murmuring Yuyan's name but..." Jiang Yang was listening what Lu Feng was saying but when he stopped suddenly, Jiang Yang asked, "But...what?" Lu Feng replied while looking at Lu Qiang who was sleeping soundly in a bed, "My brother is hurt, Jiang Yang!" Jiang Yang felt worried to listen this and asked, "Hurt? What happened?" Lu Feng narrated him everything that happened after they dropped Jiang Yang off at the hospital. He told him how and why Lu Qiang got himself drunk even though he hated to drink. He even told him, what Lu Qiang was murmuring all the way to the home until he fell asleep. When Lu Feng pointed out that he was crying too, Jiang Yang felt shocked. He too knew, Lu Qiang was not the person who will shed tears easily. Jiang Yang and Lu Feng both understood what was bothering Lu Qiang. Lu Feng then said, "We all know about what happened with Yuyan, but he still doesn't know, even though he should have been the first person to know about it. He is trying to live

with this fact but I am afraid that this will keep hurting him to the point of feeling helpless and useless.” Jiang Yang agreed and said, “I think it would be better if he was told about it soon. Do you think we should tell him?” Lu Feng replied, “I wanted to tell him everything when he woke up, because of his condition. But, I know him; he would only want to hear it from Yuyan, so we can’t do anything.” Jiang Yang sighed and said, “You are right. Just leave it to both of them.” Lu Feng replied, “Yup! We should do that.” He then paused and asked, “How is Yuyan?” Jiang Yang laughed and said, “These lovebirds are compatible in their sleeping time also. She painted this afternoon while thinking about Lu Qiang, I guess, and is now sleeping.” Lu Feng too laughed and said, “And my brother drank the entire afternoon thinking about Yuyan.” Both laughed and after a moment Jiang Yang said, “Today she painted something colorful, not dark, which is showing that she is trying to overcome her past and it is all because of Lu Qiang.” Lu Feng replied, “That’s good. Lu Qiang would be happy to hear it.” Jiang Yang: “Yes! I will show both of you her paintings. She is a very talented painter.” Lu Feng: “Sure!” Both talked for a while then hung up the call. ——— Next morning.. Lu Qiang woke up and he saw he was in an unknown place. He rubbed his eyes and immediately got up. He looked around with his sleepy eyes while sitting in a bed. His head was hurting so he held his head with both hands and closed his eyes to bear the pain of the headache. Just then he heard the familiar voice saying, “Good morning, Romeo!” Lu Qiang looked in the direction of the voice. It was Lu Feng sitting on the couch while doing work on his laptop. Lu Qiang said, “Good Morning!” Then he asked while still pressing his temples with his fingers, “What’s this place?” Lu Feng replied with a smile, “This is my place.” He then set his laptop aside, got up from the couch and picked up glass from the dining table. Lu Feng already prepared a drink for Lu Qiang to lessen his hangover, knowing his head will hurt badly. Lu Feng moved towards the bed and passed the glass to Lu Feng and said, “Have this.” Lu Qiang took the glass and drank it till the last drop. Then, he laid back on the bed after handing the glass back to Lu Feng. Lu Qiang closed his eyes and asked, “What’s the time?” Lu Feng replied while moving to the couch, “It’s

eight o'clock, but don't bother to get up, it's Saturday and you don't have to go to the office. Lu Qiang closed his eyes and continued lying in a bed. He then asked, "When did you buy this place?" Lu Feng was sitting in a couch and was working in his laptop again. "Just after, you found my previous place." Lu Qiang: "It must be costly, how did you manage?" Lu Feng looked at him with questioning expressions and said, "My brother, are you doubting my capability?" Lu Qiang: "I am not." Lu Feng smiled and said, "I know, indirectly you are asking me, what I do to earn money." Lu Qiang just smiled lightly and didn't reply. Lu Feng: "I'll tell you one day but not now." He then continued, "By the way, are you feeling better after getting drunk and letting out everything that was in your heart." Lu Qiang replied, "I don't know what you are talking about." Lu Feng smiles and said, "I might have mistaken." Just then, again Lu Qiang's cell phone rang. Lu Feng looked at the screen and said, "Buddy! You are in trouble." Lu Qiang asked, "Who is that?" Lu Feng replied with worried expressions on his face, "Lu Lijun!" When Lu Qiang heard Lu Lijun's name he immediately got out of the bed and ran to get the cell phone from Lu Feng, but before he could receive the call, it hung up. Lu Qiang had worried expressions on his face and said, "F**k it, I really am in a trouble." Lu Feng laughed and said, "Haha! I should not have made that drink for you. Lu Lijun's name was enough to make your hangover go away." Lu Qiang said, "It's been almost two days. I didn't go home and didn't call him." Again Lu Qiang's cell phone rang, this time it was Xiao Min. Lu Qiang received it and heard the worried voice of Xiao Min. Xiao Min: "Boss you need to come back soon. You are in trouble." Lu Qiang replied in an irritated way when he heard the word 'Trouble' again from Xio Min, "I know that I am in a trouble, just tell me how is he?" Lu Qiang never lost his temper easily, but when it came to Lu Lijun, he didn't care about anything. Xiao Min replied, "Not good. Just come here as soon as possible." Lu Qiang cut the call and went to bathroom to get freshen up. He came and asked for his car keys to Lu Feng. Lu Feng didn't give him the car keys and said, "I'll drive, you are not over your hangover yet and you might need my help there." Lu Qiang didn't think much as he was in a hurry and said, "Okay." Both walked out of the flat

and went to the parking lot through a lift. They sat in the car and Lu Feng drove the car to the Lu mansion. It took them an hour to reach to the Lu mansion since it was far from Lu Feng's place. When they reached near Lu mansion, Lu Feng stopped the car away from the mansion and got out of it. He then asked Lu Qiang to go by himself and he will come by walking. Lu Feng didn't want anyone to see them together for the reason only known to him. Lu Qiang drove inside the mansion. He stopped the car in front of mansion's door and ran inside. On the way, he crossed his aunt, Lu Feng's mother, Lu Hui. She stopped and said, "Thank god you finally came. Now go and handle him." Lu Qiang didn't pay any attention to her and ran inside in the direction of staircase to go to the Lu Lijun's room. Lu Hui noticed that Lu Qiang didn't give her any attention so she sighed and walked outside. She saw that Lu Feng was coming towards her direction from mansion's outer gate. She stepped forward and stopped in front of him. She looked at him and asked, "Where were you?" Lu Feng didn't look into her eyes. He looked in other direction and said, "I don't think it's necessary to answer any of your questions." Lu Hui got angry and said, "How dare you? I am your mother." Lu Feng walked passed her and said after stopping two steps further, "That's the sad reality of my life, which I can't change." Lu Hui felt frustrated with this answer from her son and said, "Why do you treat me like this? Why are you like this to your own mother? So many years have passed and I still don't know the reason, why you...." "You are the reason I am being like this, Mother!" Lu Feng turned and replied while looking into her eyes before she could complete her sentence. Lu Feng then turned around and walked inside the mansion in hurry to check on Lu Lijun. Lu Hui couldn't help but keep staring at her son's retreating back with a sad expression on her face.

114 Guilty Grandpa...

At the same time..Morning..

Jiang residence..

Jiang Yuyan woke up and realized that she was sleeping in her bed not in a couch in her art room. She understood how she came here as it was not the first time something like this happened. She knew, her brother was always there to take care of her.

Jiang Yuyan went downstairs after getting ready, where Jiang Yang was waiting for her to have breakfast. Fortunately a cook and the maid had returned back from their holidays. They prepared the breakfast for these siblings as per instructed by their mother Jiang Ruolan.

When Jiang Yuyan came to living room Jiang Yang said, “Good Morning?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Good Morning Brother!”

They both walked towards Dining table as servant served the breakfast for both of them.

After both started to have their breakfast, Jiang Yang asked while looking in his dish and picking the vegetable in his chopstick, “So, had a good night sleep?”

Jiang smiled and said while looking at her brother, “Yup! Like never before.”

“That’s really great.” Jiang Yang replied with a smile while looking back at her but his eyes were indicating that he had something else in his mind too.

Jiang Yuyan nodded with a smile and continued to have her breakfast.

Jiang Yang sighed and said, “But I am afraid that someone must be having sleepless nights.”

Jiang Yuyan lifted her head and looked at her brother to know what he meant. She asked, “What do you mean?”

Jiang Yang didn't look at her and replied while serving more vegetables in Jiang Yuyan's dish, “Well, someone might be having regrets about not knowing the hurtful thing in his loved one's life or he might be regretting about not being able to be beside her when she was suffering alone and those regrets must be hurting him deep inside to the extent to make himself drunk just to let go of the pain he was feeling.”

Jiang Yuyan continued to stare at her brother to listen further more. She understood what he was talking about. The thought of Lu Qiang being hurt and he was drunk made her feel sad and uneasy.

She asked, “Lu Qiang?”

Jiang Yang replied, “Who else that can be?”

Jiang Yuyan remembered each and every word her brother said a moment before and asked with displeased expressions, “Was he drunk?”

Jiang Yang nodded and said, “I guess so.”

Jiang Yuyan felt tense and asked, “Where is he? I need to see him”

Jiang Yang expected this reaction from her and said, “Calm down! He is with Lu Feng and he will take care of Lu Qiang,”

Jiang Yuyan was feeling restless and said, “But, still I want to see him.”

Jiang Yang nodded and said, “Okay! But not now. It's not the right time.”

Jiang Yuyan always obeyed to what her brother said. She knew anything her brother did or said, there was always a reason behind so she didn't say anything further. She just could wait to meet Lu Qiang again.

Jiang Yang then continued, “There is good news.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at her brother with surprised expressions and asked, “What good news?”

Jiang Yang replied, “Our two friends finally reconciled.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “That’s really good.”

Jiang Yang then changed the topic and said, “By the way, I heard that you are going stay in Lu Mansion.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Yes! You and Grandpa Lu planed that over acting drama, so how could have I allow your efforts to go waste.”

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously and asked, “Was it our efforts or someone else’s?”

Jiang Yuyan straight forwardly answered while looking into her dish to pick food in her chopsticks, “Someone else’s.” She then put food in her mouth and started to chew and was trying to hide a smile and blush on her face.

Jiang Yang smiled and said, “My little sister is grown up now.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t reply and continued to eat her food quietly while lowering down her head.

Both finished their breakfast and sat in the living room.

Jiang Yang: “Let’s pack your stuff today and I will take you to Lu Mansion tomorrow, as I am home for two days.”

Jiang Yuyan: “Tomorrow?”

Jiang Yang: “Yes! Next week you have to attend university so it would be great if you go to Lu Mansion at least a day before so that you will be comfortable there.”

Jiang Yuyan’s face became sad and she said, “I am suddenly feeling unwilling to go as you will not be around there. The thought of me being away from you is making me feel uneasy.”

Jiang Yang: “That’s totally normal as you have habit of me being around you all the time but now it’s time for you to come out of that shell and also Lu Qiang will be there.”

Jiang Yuyan: “You are right brother but still...”

Jiang Yang: “Don’t worry! If not me then Lu Qiang will always be there beside you all the time.” He then smiled slyly

and said, “You can trust Grandpa Lu.”

Jiang Yang looked at him to ask what did he mean but before that he got up and said, “C’mon, let’s go to your room and pack your stuff.”

Both went to her room and started to pack all the necessary stuff.

—

In Lu mansion

Lu Qiang ran upstairs to Lu Lijun’s room. When he reached there, he saw his parents, grandparents and all the other family members were there, standing outside of the Lu Lijun room’s door. Everyone had worried expressions on their faces.

Lu Qiang understood, Lu Lijun must have locked himself in a room. Lu Qiang went there and asked, “What exactly happened?”

As he asked this question, Elder Lu started to cough and to look around here and there. Lu Qiang understood, this has something to do with his grandpa. He directly went to him and asked with serious expressions on his face, “What happened?”

Others were quiet as they knew; nobody can help in any way in this matter. They just stood there with worried expressions on their faces. When it came to Lu Lijun, nobody dared to say anything to Lu Qiang.

Elder Lu then looked at him and said, “I just answered his question and he got angry.”

Lu Qiang asked in a calm but firm voice, “What did you say?”

Elder Lu cleared his throat and replied, “Well, He was missing you badly and was sad. When I went to him, he asked me that where is brother Lu Qiang since last two days and I just said the truth.” Elder Lu, then paused and behaved like he did nothing wrong.

Lu Qiang felt annoyed and asked in irritated tone, “Grandpa! Will you tell me now what did you said to make him like this. I am out of patience now.”

Grandpa Lu replied in a casual way, "I just answered him that your brother went out to bring a sister-in-law for you."

When Lu Qiang heard this, he had no words to say to his grandpa. He couldn't do anything but frown. Lu Feng came to upstairs too and he heard what Elder Lu said. He too couldn't help but pinch the space between his eyebrows in annoyance.

115 Can't Sacrifice This Time!!

Lu Qiang was angry but he had to control it, as the person in front of him was his Grandpa who he loved and respected a lot. He knew, sometimes in the excitement Grandpa had habit to go overboard.

Grandpa stood there without saying a single word further as he knew, even the small thing related to Lu Lijun can make Lu Qiang lose his mind.

Lu Feng stepped towards Lu Qiang and stood beside him. He said while patting Lu Qiang's back, "Calm down. It's not that big matter. We can still handle him."

When others saw, the way Lu Feng talked to Lu Qiang, they were quite surprised to see this, but they thought it's because of Lu Lijun, as he was the most important and precious person in both elder brother's lives.

Lu Qiang nodded to what Lu Feng said. He then took a deep breath and said while looking at others, "Everyone, go downstairs." He then looked at Lu Feng and said, "You stay."

Lu Feng looked at him and said, "Even if you have asked me to leave, I would be here only, because it's about my little brother too."

Everyone went downstairs and decided to wait for Lu Qiang and Lu Feng to make Lu Lijun come out of the room.

Lu Qiang knocked on the door and said, "Lu Lijun, It's me, open the door."

There was no reply. Lu Qiang tried again and said, "I know you are upset with me. I am sorry."

Still there was no reply. It was not surprising for Lu Qiang and Lu Feng as it was very difficult to convince Lu Lijun once he is upset with something. He is like an angel when he is fine but at the time like this he was very difficult to handle.

There was a reason why Lu Qiang and Lu Feng pampered him a lot and no one was allowed to behave harshly with him. Since last five to six years Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were taking care of him in their own way. Even though they both never talked to each other, their understanding to handle Lu Lijun was always in sync.

They didn't have to consult or ask each other what to do. When one was apart, the other one was always there to take care of Lu Lijun. It happened mostly during Lu Qiang's business trips. Lu Feng always tried to be around Lu Lijun whenever Lu Qiang went on his business trips. Lu Qiang too knew that Lu Feng will handle Lu Lijun properly so he never felt worried whenever he was away.

Other than Lu Qiang, Lu Lijun only listened to Lu Feng. Lu Lijun's anger was not an easy thing to handle for Lu family but his two elder brothers were like a cold breeze to Lu Lijun's heart which was able to cool him down anytime with only small efforts from them.

Lu Qiang tried to convince Lu Lijun to open the door but as he expected, there was no reply. Lu Feng tried too but still there was no use.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng thought about the solution to open the door. Lu Lijun locked the door from inside which was unable to open from outside with the keys. Before this too Lu Lijun did this but he opened the door once he cooled down after listening to Lu Qiang, but this time he was not ready to open it. Half hour passed by just to convince him but there was no reply, not a sound of anything from inside.

All family members were worried too as Lu Lijun never took this much time to come out once he listened to Lu Qiang. This time the condition was difficult that even Elder Lu felt worried. He never imagined, his words could affect him that badly. He was just sitting quietly to wait for Lu Lijun to come out. His wife looked at him and gave him assuring nod that everything will be fine.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng decided to enter inside the room through gallery of Lu Lijun's room. Lu Lijun's room was

adjacent to his parent's room and their galleries were facing in same direction and were away by a distance which could be cover with some efforts.

Breaking the door was not an option, as in the past doctor suggested them not to do it until and unless that's the last option. Considering his condition, making him come out of the room on his own by talking to him was the best thing to do.

Breaking the door was like forcing him to come out and going against his will and that thing was not good in his case. He could have taken different way to show his anger instead of locking himself in a room and that was the other concern doctor had so locking himself inside the room was safest option.

Most of the times he understood and came out on his own but this time, he took too much time so Lu Qiang and Lu Feng started to feel worried.

Both entered into Lu Qiang's parent's room and straight headed to the gallery. The distance between two galleries was not much but still it was dangerous if one did a mistake.

Lu Qiang removed his jacket and put it on gallery's railing. He then looked at Lu Feng and said, "I will cross this gallery you stay here, it might be dangerous."

Lu Feng replied, "No! I will come too."

Lu Qiang: "I will open the door once I enter the room then you can come."

Lu Feng: "You know better, you can't do that until he permits you to open it and I don't have that much patience to wait. Also, I am his brother too and I have a right to feel worried about him."

Upon hearing Lu Feng, Lu Qiang didn't say anything to stop him but just said, "Okay, but be careful."

Lu Feng nodded and said, "You too."

Lu Qiang climbed the gallery and stood on its railing. He crossed the gallery in just one long jump. Lu Feng followed him and did the same. Both entered the room and were

surprised to see the messy condition in the room. It looked like he was very angry and he threw away each and every thing in his room.

His books, toys, clothes in a wardrobe, bed sheets on bed and chair all were thrown out somewhere else from their places. Toys were broken. Even the new gaming laptop bought by Lu Qiang as his birthday present was lying in one corner and looked like he threw it too.

Both headed inside by crossing the mess in the room below their feet. They searched for Lu Lijun but he was nowhere to be seen. Lu Qiang checked the other side of the bed while Lu Feng checked the bathroom but he was not there too.

Lu Qiang looked at the wardrobe and stepped towards him. He saw Lu Lijun was sitting in a wardrobe while leaning backward to it's wall with his eyes closed. He looked like had fallen asleep.

When Lu Feng and Lu Qiang saw him both gave out a sigh of relief. Lu Qiang checked him if he could wake up Lu Lijun but he was in a deep sleep. Both felt worried to see him sleeping at this time of a day.

Lu Qiang carried Lu Lijun in his arms. Lu Feng opened the door for Lu Qiang to take Lu Lijun in his room. It was unspeakable understanding between these two brothers. Lu Feng too followed Lu Qiang to his room and on the way he called Lu Lijun's doctor to check him.

Lu Lijun's room was messy so Lu Qiang took Lu Lijun to his own room which was on second floor. Also, whenever Lu Lijun behaved like this, Lu Qiang always preferred to keep him beside himself in his own room. Lu Qiang put Lu Lijun in his bed and covered him with the quilt. Lu Lijun looked calm and sleeping soundly while breathing steadily. Lu Qiang then leaned downward, caressed Lu Lijun's head and kissed him on his forehead.

Lu Qiang sat on the corner of the bed with worried expressions on his face. Lu Lijun was sleeping right now but how he will react once he wake up, that was the thing to be worried about. Lu Feng was standing near the bed.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang, put his one hand on Lu Qiang's shoulder and said, "Don't worry. We can make him understand the things, he just need time."

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Lijun's calm face and said worriedly, "I know, but I don't want to do anything which can make him go back to, from where we pulled him back."

Lu Feng too looked at sleeping Lu Lijun and said, "He is grown up kid now, not five year old. We did our best till now but now it's time to make him understand the things clearly."

Lu Qiang replied, "I can't rush for anything. Just let some more time pass by."

Lu Feng, "I too am worried about him but too much time might make it difficult for him to take things normally. Also, this time I won't be able to see you sacrificing anything for any reason. Understand!"

Lu Qiang didn't react. He just listened to what Lu Feng said while looking at Lu Lijun. After a while he replied, "This time something is there that I can't sacrifice and also I want both of them in my life. I need to find a solution."

Lu Feng felt relaxed after hearing this words and said, "You are right but I think you don't have to worry this much." He then smiled and said teasingly, "I think, Lu Lijun will like Yuyan a lot that even you will feel jealous of him."

Lu Qiang too smiled and said, "I hope this to happen in reality. As long as both can stay beside me, I am fine with anything."

116 Upset Lu Lijun!!

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng stayed in the room to wait for Lu Lijun's doctor. After sometimes doctor arrived. Lu Qiang narrated him whole incidence. Doctor checked Lu Lijun and assured Lu Qiang and Lu Feng that Lu Lijun was fine. He then told them the reason behind why Li Lijun fell asleep as saying, 'He went through a mental stress and angry phase that made him feel tired and he slept'.

Doctor gave them some instruction and asked them to solve the problem by talking to him and making him understand it and then he left.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng both stayed in the room to wait for Lu Lijun to wake up. Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang's worried face and said, "I think you should get fresh. I will be here to look after Lu Lijun."

Lu Qiang was in same clothes from previous day as he was drunk and slept for long time. When he got call from his assistant to come back to Lu Mansion, he didn't get chance to have a bath and change into new clothes. He had a stench of alcohol on him too.

Lu Qiang nodded and went to the bathroom to have a bath. When he came back after a while, Lu Lijun was still sleeping and Lu Feng was sitting in a couch to look after Lu Lijun.

All family members were informed by the doctor that everything was fine so they felt relax and went to their own work, as Lu Qiang and Lu Feng was already there to take care of Lu Lijun and they couldn't be of any help.

Servant brought breakfast for both to the room as instructed by Lu Qiang's mother Lu Jiahui. Servant kept it on a table but both didn't touch it. Lu Qiang sat in the couch beside Lu Feng and waited for Lu Lijun to wake up. Just after Half hour Lu Qiang saw there was a movement in a bed and walked fast towards it. Lu Feng followed him too.

Lu Lijun woke up. He opened his eyes and saw that his both brothers were standing near the bed and they were looking at him. He saw Lu Qiang and he looked in other direction as showing he was upset with his brother.

Lu Lijun realized that he was not in his own room but it was not something new for him. Whenever he created such situations either he end up being in Lu Qiang's room or when Lu Qiang was not around, he had to be in Lu Feng's room.

Lu Qiang sat on the edge of the bed and asked in a calm voice with little smile on his face, "You are awake. How are you feeling Lu Lijun?"

Lu Lijun got up and sat in the bed while rubbing his eyes with his fingers. Lu Qiang held his hands and said, "Don't rub your eyes. I will help you to clean it water."

Lu Lijun looked at his brother this time after hearing him. Lu Qiang's caring and loving words were enough to melt Lu Lijun's heart. Lu Lijun looked at Lu Qiang but didn't say anything though it looked like; he was having so many questions in his mind.

Lu Qiang caressed his hair and said, "You must be hungry, let's eat something first."

Lu Qiang knew that that Lu Lijun didn't have his breakfast.

Lu Lijun looked downward and shook his head as saying no for breakfast.

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng and both understood, Lu Lijun was ready to go in hunger strike mode until he gets satisfactory response from Lu Qiang.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Lijun and said with a smile, "Come to me I will help you to get fresh, then we together can trouble brother Lu Qiang."

Lu Lijun nodded and was ready to go towards Lu Feng. Lu Qiang got up from the bed and made a space for Lu Lijun to get out of the bed. Lu Lijun got down and straight went to Lu Feng without looking at Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng knew, it was Lu Lijun's way of showing his displeasure. They had to make him feel that someone was on his side so only then he will listen further what they wanted to say. Lu Feng acted as being with him and Lu Lijun listened to him.

Lu Feng took Lu Lijun to bathroom and helped to freshen up. Till then Lu Qiang was collecting his thoughts that how to answer Lu Lijun or how to start this conversation with him.

Lu Qiang never felt troubled before but this time situation was different as he couldn't say to him 'If he doesn't like it then he won't do it.' Instead, he had to prepare Lu Qiang for future.

Lu Feng and Lu Lijun came back in the room. Lu Lijun didn't go to Lu Qiang and instead stood with Lu Feng.

Lu Feng patted Lu Lijun's head and said, "Let's eat first then we can talk."

Lu Lijun shook his head and said while looking at Lu Feng, "I don't want to."

Lu Feng smiled and said while looking downward towards Lu Lijun, "No problem! If you won't eat then Lu Qiang won't eat too." He then laughed little and said, "And you know the best part, brother Lu Qiang hadn't eaten anything since yesterday, so we can punish him by letting him starve himself for whole day, what you say?"

Lu Lijun heard this and looked at Lu Qiang who was standing near the bed. Then, he looked at Lu Feng and said, "I want to eat."

Lu Feng took him to the couch in the room and both sat there. Lu Qiang and Lu Feng smiled little while looking at each other but made sure that Lu Lijun won't notice it.

Lu Feng then asked to Lu Lijun, "What do you want to eat?"

Lu Lijun just answered calmly, "Anything."

Lu Feng then looked at Lu Qiang and said, "Lu Qiang, why are you standing there? Ask servant to bring food for Lu Lijun and made sure it would be what our little buddy likes."

117 She Will Be The One I Like!!

Lu Qiang nodded with a smile and asked servant to bring fresh food for Lu Lijun as the food that was in a room was already cold. Lu Qiang instructed him what to bring.

Treating Lu Lijun with his favourite food was one of the way to make him feel cheer up. Some part of their mission to make Lu Lijun happy, could be achieved by serving tasty and his favorite food in front of him.

Soon servant came and brought food for these three brothers and kept it on a four seater circular coffee table in the room and took back the cold food what he had brought earlier.

Lu Feng took Lu Lijun to coffee table and both sat on the chairs. Then, he uncovered the food which was in front of them on table and said, “Wooohoo! Everything here is your favorite Lu Lijun. I must say, brother Lu Qiang really knows what our little lad likes.”

Lu Lijun looked at Lu Qiang, who was still standing near the bed calmly with his hands tucked in his pockets. Lu Qiang just smiled when Lu Lijun looked at him but Lu Lijun immediately averted his sight from Lu Qiang and looked back at the food.

Lu Feng served only two dishes. One for Lu Lijun and other for himself and said to Lu Lijun, “Start eating, I am starving... Uummm.. It’s looking delicious.” Then, he gave Lu Lijun a spoon to eat soup.”

Lu Lijun accepted a spoon but kept it aside. He then took third dish from the tray and kept it beside his dish. He started to serve the food in that dish by himself.

Lu Feng stopped him and asked, “I already served you. If you want more let me do it.”

Lu Lijun shook his head and said, “It’s for brother Lu Qiang.”

Lu Feng knew what Lu Lijun was doing and he was happy to see that everything was going according to his plan. He smiled and replied, “Ohh I see. I thought we were going to punish him.”

On hearing these words Lu Lijun shook his head and said, “No need.”

Lu Feng smiled and looked at Lu Qiang then said, “Why are you standing there? See how much Lu Lijun cares for you.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said after reaching to coffee table, “I know, he is the best younger brother in this world.”

Lu Lijun smiled a little upon hearing these words but he tried to hide it. Lu Qiang sat beside him and they started to eat. All three were starving and started to dig in a food like hungry wolves and it didn't took much time for them to finish all the food there.

Once they finish, Lu Feng said, “Let's go to garden now.” To which, other two nodded in an agreement.

All three went to the garden and sat in the patio which was Lu Lijun's favorite place. Once they sat on the circular benches in the patio and settled down, Lu Feng signaled something to Lu Qiang. Lu Feng and Lu Lijun were sitting on one table while Lu Qiang was sitting opposite to them.

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Lijun and said, “I am sorry that I ignored you for two days.”

Lu Lijun looked back at Lu Qiang but didn't say anything.

Lu Feng then talked on behalf of Lu Lijun, “What about the thing that grandpa said? We both are upset with you”

Lu Feng preferred to jump on the main topic first. He knew exactly what Lu Lijun wanted to ask. When Lu Feng asked this, Lu Lijun immediately looked at Lu Qiang as he wanted to know the answer of same question.

Lu Qiang looked at Lu Lijun and said, “About bringing a sister-in-law for you, yes one day that will happen but not this soon and trust me, I won't do anything without informing you

and also only the girl you will approve will be your sister-in-law”

Lu Qiang could have taken an easy way by saying that grandpa was wrong but this time he didn't wanted to take that easy way. He wanted Lu Lijun to be ready for what was going to happen in future. Also, Jiang Yuyan was as important as Lu Lijun for him. He didn't want to give up on either one of them. He was sure of the fact that Lu Lijun will like Jiang Yuyan for sure.

Lu Lijun's expressions became quite normal after hearing this but still he didn't say anything.

Just then Lu Feng said, “You know, last night brother Lu Qiang was with me.”

Lu Feng and Lu Qiang was aware of the fact that Lu Lijun must be thinking about the whereabouts of Lu Qiang after what grandpa said so he decided to tell him, where he was actually. Though, he didn't mention about the night Lu Qiang spent with Jiang Yuyan. What he said was half truth but Lu Feng was satisfied with the fact that at least he was not a lie.

From assistant Xiao Min, Lu Lijun made sure to know that Lu Qiang was not having any office related work so it was obvious for him to trust his grandpa's words.

Lu Lijun looked at both of them surprisingly and asked curiously, “But, both of you don't talk to each other.”

Lu Feng replied, “It's not what you think. We talk but this is the secret between us and you are not allowed to tell this to anyone. Okay?”

Lu Lijun nodded in an agreement and said while looking at his both brothers, ‘I won't but I want to go out with both of you together.’”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Sure”

Lu Feng and Lu Qiang both gave out a sigh of relief as they were able to bring Lu Lijun back to normal. Both noticed he was in a good mood now so Lu Feng Jumped back to original topic after signaling to Lu Qiang.

Lu Feng: “Ohh! We forgot the main reason because of which our little lad was upset.”

Lu Lijun looked at Lu Feng with questioning sight.

Lu Feng then replied while looking at Lu Lijun, “We left the topic of our sister-in-law behind, don’t you think so?”

Lu Lijun heard this and replied, “As brother Lu Qiang said, she will be the one whom I will like so it’s okay.”

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng both gave out a sigh of relief as it was easy to make Lu Lijun understand it easily unlike the other times when he wouldn’t listen easily. It might be because he was eleven year old and was becoming a mature kid now to understand the things clearly.

118 I Am Listening!!

Jiang Residence...

Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yang went upstairs to Jiang Yuyan's bedroom. As they reached in her bedroom room Jiang Yang said, "Just few days ago you unpacked all your stuff and now you have to pack it again."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said while moving to her wardrobe, "Hmm! You are right, but I won't take much stuff with me, just the necessities."

Jiang Yang was standing near the entrance looking at his sister. He smiled mischievously and said, "Well, if you listen to me, I say just go there empty handed. Trust me, Lu Qiang will arrange everything for you; you wouldn't even have to buy sanitary napkins."

Jiang Yuyan turned her head back to look at her brother and said mockingly, "I already know."

Jiang Yang was expecting his sister to get annoyed but to his surprise, she didn't. He then moved to the couch, sat there lazily and said, "I think, you are getting immune to my teasing. All this confidence of yours is all because of that bossy friend of mine."

Jiang Yuyan turned back towards wardrobe and said, "It's all because of his love for me."

Jiang Yang replied, "Yeah, you are right. Now, I have been left alone to eat dog food given by my sister and my friend."

Jiang Yuyan laughed and said, "Alone? You have your darling Lu Feng with you."

Jiang Yang smiled and said, "Ohh! Right, you reminded me of him, now I will call my darling. Let me see what's going on with them, time for some spicy news."

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said "Yeah, go ahead."

Jiang Yang then picked up his cell phone and dialed Lu Feng's number.

After solving the matter with Lu Lijun, both brothers were sitting in the patio while Lu Lijun was busy in admiring the fish in the pond around it.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Lijun who was busy in his own world and said to Lu Qiang, "Don't you think this time it was easier to handle Lu Lijun. I mean you just said few lines and he understood."

Lu Qiang nodded and said, "You are right. I guess he is not an immature kid now. He is becoming mature and understanding the things."

Lu Feng replied, "Yes! I think it's just us who think of him as a five year old kid."

Lu Qiang nodded and said, "I guess so too."

Lu Feng then looked back at Lu Qiang and asked, "Yuyan is going to be in Lu Mansion soon, what you think about Lu Lijun's reaction? I guess it's going to be hard for you."

Just as Lu Qiang was about to answer Lu Feng, his cell phone rang. He looked at the cell phone and said, "It's Jiang Yang."

Lu Qiang laughed and said, "He must be missing you."

Lu Feng sighed and said, "Hmm! Him and his over acting, only God can save me from it." He said it and picked up a call, "Shoot!"

Jiang Yang laughed and said, "How can I shoot my darling? I just called to get an update of that Romeo. How is he?"

As Jiang Yuyan got that her brother was talking about Lu Qiang, she moved to the couch from the wardrobe and sat beside her brother.

Lu Feng smiled and said while looking at Lu Qiang, "That Romeo was in trouble a few moments ago, but now everything is fine."

Lu Qiang didn't react he just smiled.

Jiang Yang looked at Jiang Yuyan and said while laughing, “Haha! My sister is here then how come he is in trouble?”

Jiang Yuyan heard this, and threw a cushion from the couch to her brother.

Jiang Yang: “Ouch! Darling, your love is in trouble now. Save me from my sister.”

Lu Feng laughed and said, “You deserve it.”

Jiang Yang, “Okay! On serious note, tell me what happened. Is he okay?”

When Jiang Yang asked this, Jiang Yuyan asked him to put the phone on speaker as she too wanted to know about Lu Qiang. She would have done that before but she didn't as Jiang Yang asked her not to.

Lu Feng first checked for Lu Lijun who was giving food to the fish. He made sure that he was at a distance from them; where he won't be able to hear anything.

Lu Feng then narrated him everything, while Lu Qiang was listening him and paying attention to Lu Lijun.

After hearing everything Jiang Yang replied, “Haha! It will be fun too see when Jiang Yuyan will be there to stay. I will be ready to watch live entertainment with popcorn in my hand.”

Lu Feng smiled and said, “I will join you too.”

Jiang Yang looked at his sister who was desperate to get an update on Lu Qiang, so he asked Lu Feng to pass the call to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang answered it to which Jiang Yang replied, “Man, if you wanted to drink that badly then why did you wait for Lu Feng. You should have come to me, I would have made you drink dozens of beer bottles instead of only four.”

Lu Qiang replied, “I will keep this in mind for next time.” He then thought about something and said, “Don't tell Yuyan about it.”

Jiang Yang smiled to look at Jiang Yuyan and said, “I think you just confessed to her yourself.”

Lu Qiang asked, “What do you mean?”

Jiang Yang replied, “Well, she is beside me and my phone is on speaker.”

Lu Qiang blurted out in a shock, “What?”

Lu Qiang didn't expect it and just kept silent. Jiang Yang knew he must be shocked, so he waited for Lu Qiang to reply. Jiang Yang was smiling and was enjoying this, while Jiang Yuyan was looking at her brother with killer gaze as she knew her brother did it intentionally.

Lu Feng smiled mischievously, he knew Jiang Yuyan was there and what just happened.

Lu Qiang cleared his throat and asked, “You there?”

It was obvious that this question was for Jiang Yuyan so Jiang Yang turned off the speaker and passed the phone to his sister. Jiang Yuyan received the cell phone and replied in a calm voice, “I am listening.”

119 I Will be Waiting For You!!

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang, both realized that it was the first time, they were talking on a phone and it was a different feeling for both of them.

Lu Qiang awkwardly said, “I didn’t drink much, just little.”

Jiang Yuyan replied mockingly, “I know, the person who can’t even handle half glass of alcohol drank four bottles of it and it is just a little.”

Jiang Yang heard it and said with a smile, “That’s my sister. Go girl!”

Because of Lu Feng, the Jiang siblings already knew about Lu Qiang’s low alcohol tolerance level.

Lu Qiang couldn’t say anything because of the way Jiang Yuyan replied. He didn’t know how to reply her. It was not a big deal actually, but they say ‘Surrendering in front of your loved one, is the thing that makes any relationship beautiful’.

Lu Feng was looking at Lu Qiang’s nervous face and was smiling. For him, it was the first time he was seeing Lu Qiang nervous like this. The invincible president of Lu Corporation was nervous in front of his woman.

Lu Feng got up from his seat and went to accompany Lu Lijun. He preferred to leave Lu Qiang alone so that he could talk comfortably with Jinag Yuyan.

Lu Qiang cleared his throat again and said, “I won’t do it again.”

Jiang Yuyan replied with just “Hmm!” Then, she asked in a soft voice, “Are you feeling better now? I wanted to see you but...” She said it and looked at her brother who was pretending to listen her conversation with Lu Qiang carefully to annoy her. He signaled her to continue and don’t mind him. Jiang Yuyan too ignored him and continued.

Those words from Jiang Yuyan touched Lu Qiang's heart. It was the first time Jiang Yuyan said that she wanted to see him and the concern for him in her voice made him feel warmth to his heart.

He replied in a calm voice, "I want to see you too." After saying this, he felt heavy in his heart. He realized that how badly he was missing her.

Only a day passed by since they both saw each other, but they still felt like it was an eternity. They were already missing each other.

Jiang Yuyan kept silent upon hearing these words and couldn't say anything, she was feeling the same as Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang then looked at Lu Lijun and said, "I will try to come in the evening but not sure I will be able to make it or not"

Upon hearing these words, Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "Umm! I guess you should spend your day with Lu Lijun, don't you think so?"

For Jiang Yuyan, Lu Qiang's wish to see her was enough, so she didn't expect him to come to her. She heard Lu Feng and her brother's conversation, so knew what happened at Lu Mansion. She too had been dependent on her brother all these years, so she could understand Lu Lijun better. She didn't want Lu Qiang to ignore his younger brother just because of her.

Lu Qiang was overwhelmed with these words from Jiang Yuyan and said, "Thank you so much."

Jiang Yuyan smiled and replied, "You don't need to."

Lu Qiang then thought about something and said, "How about I call you tonight after Lu Lijun falls asleep? That way we can talk for some time to make up for it."

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "How about, I move into your place tomorrow? Then, we don't have to wait to talk to each other on phone"

When Lu Qiang heard this, he asked in a surprised way, "Tomorrow? Are you coming here tomorrow?"

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Why? You don’t want me to come there this soon.”

Lu Qiang was feeling happy to hear this and said “No! It’s not like that. I was just surprised to listen that you are coming here. If it’s possible I would have brought you here way before.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled again but this time she laughed a little and Lu Qiang could hear the sound he missed a lot. The sound of her cute giggle. He kept silent to listen it again.

When Jiang Yuyan felt this silence so she asked, “What happened?”

Lu Qiang just replied, “Nothing”

Jiang Yuyan then continued, “Grandpa Lu and my brother decided everything so I don’t have anything to say in it.”

Lu Qiang smiled and replied, “So these two people know how to act in a sensible way. First time they did something that made me happy.” He then paused for a moment and said, “I will be waiting for you.”

Jiang Yuyan replied with, “Hmm!”

Then, they cut the call. Once Jiang Yuyan finished talking she passed the mobile back to her brother. He was still looking at her and was smiling mischievously. She frowned and asked, “What?”

He laughed and said, “Nothing! Can’t I look at my sister and smile or have all rights have been reserved to Mr. Lu Qiang only?”

She didn’t react just got up from the couch. Once she moved towards wardrobe and made sure her brother can’t see her face, she couldn’t stop smiling and blushing.

Jiang Yang saw her retreating back and said, “At least let me see how you look while blushing.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t turn back and continue going through the stuff in her wardrobe while still smiling and blushing.

She took out a bag to pack her stuff in it. Jiang Yang was sitting on the couch lazily. He looked at her and asked, “Need any help?”

She shook her head and replied, “Nope! I can manage.” She packed her bags and put them on side.

—————

In Lu Mansion...Evening...

As promised, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng took Lu Lijun out together. All family members were surprised again to see these two brothers going out together but again ignored it as thinking, they are doing it for the sake of Lu Lijun.

That day Lu Lijun enjoyed a lot with his two brothers. They went for shopping where they bought clothes and toys for Lu Lijun. They went to the amusement park, where all three enjoyed their time. After having dinner they returned back home, but Lu Lijun fell asleep in the car on the way to the Lu Mansion.

Lu Qiang took him to his room and tucked him into bed. He then return back to his room and thought to call Jiang Yuyan, but it was already late in the night so he thought she must be sleeping. He dropped his idea to call her and went to bed after freshen up. He was waiting for the next day; when she will be here at home, lying down next to him in bed, he was smiling with this thought.

120 Welcome Love!!

Next day..Early Morning..Sunday..

Lu Mansion..

Grandpa Lu already informed all family members that Jiang Yuyan was going to stay in Lu mansion from that day onward. Everyone was happy with this since they had known her since childhood. Also, because of the discussion between Jiang Yuyan's Parents and Elder Lu, on the day when they came to visit Lu Mansion before going back from China, everyone was already aware of the fact that Jiang Yuyan was going to live with them. Moreover, it was Elder Lu's royal decree so nobody had a say in it.

Lu Qiang woke up early and came downstairs after freshening up. Elder Lu was already present in the living room; reading a newspaper. He looked at Lu Qiang; who just came downstairs and stepped near sofa to sit on it. Elder Lu smiled mischievously and asked while going through the newspaper, "Someone came downstairs early today, looks like he couldn't sleep well last night.

Lu Qiang sat in the sofa and said while looking at his grandpa, "Was it that obvious?"

Elder Lu moved his sight from newspaper to Lu Qiang and said, "Hmm! Very much."

Lu Qiang looked at his wrist watch to check the time. Elder Lu saw him and said, "She is not going to come this soon, so let's have a breakfast first."

Lu Qiang nodded and both went to dining table for the breakfast. Elder Lu and Lu Qiang woke up early that day, so only the two of them were at the dining table, when the servants served them breakfast.

As they started to eat, Elder Lu asked, "Does Lu Lijun know Jiang Yuyan is going to come here to stay with us?"

Lu Qiang shook his head and said, “No! If I tell him myself, he will not accept her easily. He will think insecurely with the thought that she is someone very important to me and might take his place in my life. Let her be someone whom you called here to stay, not me.”

Elder Lu had a bite from his dish and replied after a moment while thinking about something, “Well, it’s a truth that I called her here to stay, not you.”

Lu Qiang agreed and said after gulping down the bite, “Yes! that’s actually right.”

Elder Lu looked at him and said with displeased expressions, “Someone hasn’t said thank you yet, how ungrateful!”

Lu Qiang looked back at him and said mockingly, “Okay! I will say thank you but don’t call her ‘My love’ from now on.”

Elder Lu frowned and picked up a food in his chopsticks with making a sound of it when chopsticks touched to the dish. He then looked at Lu Qiang and said, “I don’t need your ‘Thank you’, keep it to yourself.”

Lu Qiang looked at Elder Lu with a serious expression and said, “You owe me for what you did to Lu Lijun, so you have to listen to me or I will take her to somewhere else and won’t allow you to meet her even once and moreover she is ‘My love’.”

Elder Lu looked at him with a serious expression as well. He asked in a firm voice with his one eyebrow raised upward, “Are you blackmailing me?”

Lu Qiang too replied in a same way with firm voice, “Yes! And that is what exactly I want to do, take her away from here and be with her all the time and trust me I can do that.”

Elder Lu heard it and his expression changes from serious one to normal one and he said calmly, “Okay! Whatever you say dear!” He then mumbled to himself, ‘Sometimes I regret that you took after me.’

Elder Lu was aware of the capability of Lu Qiang so he didn’t argued with him.

Lu Qiang asked, “Did you just say something?”

Elder Lu shook his head and said, “I was just praising you; you took after me.”

Lu Qiang smiled teasingly and started to eat his breakfast. Elder Lu couldn't help but frown and eat his breakfast quietly. After finishing their breakfast both were eager to know when Jiang Yuyan will arrive, so elder Lu called Jiang Yang to ask when he will bring Jiang Yuyan to Lu mansion and Lu Qiang was waiting for the update from his grandpa.

At the same time...Jiang Residence...

After having breakfast the Jiang siblings were checking on the stuff they had to bring to Lu mansion. When everything was ready Jiang Yang looked at his sister and asked with a smile on his face, “So, ready to move to your in-laws?”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and replied, “Nope, ready to move in to the person who is waiting for me.”

Just then Jiang Yang got the call from Grandpa Lu. Jiang Yang laughed and said while showing his cell phone's screen to Jiang Yuyan, “There is one more person who is even more eager to take you to Lu mansion.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and nodded after seeing the calling number on the screen. Then, Jiang Yang answered the call.

Grandpa Lu asked in a pleasant voice, “Is everything ready? Should I come there to pick her up?”

Jiang replied, “No Grandpa! I am coming to drop her at your place! I want to do it myself. We are leaving now.”

Elder Lu smiled and said, “Okay! We are waiting for you.” He then hung up the call and informed Lu Qiang that they were leaving to come to Lu Mansion. Lu Qiang heard it and again looked at his wrist watch.

Elder Lu smiled mischievously and said, “Checking the time again and again won't make it run faster so stop bothering your wrist watch.”

Lu Qiang replied, "Calling them again and again won't bring them here early so stop bothering them."

Elder Lu just said, "I was doing it for you. So ungrateful."

Lu Qiang just ignored his grandpa and preferred to wait for Jiang Yuyan calmly.

An hour passed by. Other family members went for breakfast and these two stubborn men in Lu family were waiting for Jiang Yuyan desperately while sitting in the living room. Finally Elder Lu decided to go out of the mansion and to wait for Jiang Yuyan outside and welcome her personally.

Just as Elder Lu got out of the mansion's door, he saw a black car was entering through Lu mansion's gate. He immediately recognized that it was Jiang Peizhi's car. He smiled and waited for the car to come near the mansion's door.

The car stopped and Jiang Siblings stepped out of it. Elder Lu smiled and walked towards Jiang Yuyan with his both hands spread widely to welcome her with warm hug. Jiang Yuyan too stepped towards elder Lu, but before he could hug her, someone came forward and hugged Jiang Yuyan tightly and said, "Welcome Love."

That was Lu Qiang who wanted to welcome his woman with a warm hug as it was his right to do it. When he saw his grandpa was going to hug her, he immediately stepped forward and left behind his grandpa.

This happened so fast that both, elder Lu and Jiang Yuyan couldn't understand what had just happened. Elder Lu was still standing there with his hands spread widely to hug Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yuyan was stunned with sudden hug from Lu Qiang. Both, Jiang Yuyan and Elder Lu had puzzled expression on their faces.

Jiang Yang who was just behind his sister was trying to control himself from laughing hard. He pitied grandpa Lu after seeing his friend's possessive behavior.

Lu Qiang then gave her a peck on her lips and said, "Glad to see you here." He didn't care about his grandpa or anyone

while doing that but Jiang Yuyan felt little awkward as grandpa was there.

Lu Qiang let go of her and looked at grandpa with unhappy gaze. Elder Lu immediately lowered down his hands which were widely spread to hug Jiang Yuyan. He then smiled to look at Jiang Yuyan and said, “Welcome My L...”

Before he could complete the second word, Lu Qiang coughed, “Cough**Cough!”

Elder Lu understood and unhappily changed his words to, “Welcome My Darli...”

Lu Qiang coughed again and looked at his grandpa with a killer gaze.

Elder Lu frowned and said again, “Welcome dear.”

This time Lu Qiang was happy and approved of his grandpa calling her ‘Dear’.

Jiang Yuyan was just looking at both of them to figure out what was happening, while Jiang Yang was smiling ear to ear; trying hard to control his laughter.

Just then Lu Feng too came out to welcome his both friends. Before that he saw what happened while standing in the door of the mansion. He was smiling too when he saw what Lu Qiang did to his Grandpa.

He welcomed Jiang Yuyan and stepped towards Jiang Yang who was still smiling. Lu Feng stood beside him and said in a low voice that only Jiang Yang could hear it, “This is going to be more and more interesting, don’t forget to bring extra pack of popcorn for me too.”

Jiang Yang smiled and replied, “I was planning a carton of beer too.”

Lu Feng again replied in a low voice, “Buy an extra one.”

Servants took out Jiang Yuyan’s luggage from the car, carried it inside the mansion and drove the car towards parking lot. All were ready to move towards mansion with Lu Qiang walking side by side with Jiang Yuyan. Grandpa was

following them and Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were walking behind while talking to each other.

Just everyone turned towards mansions door, they saw, Lu Lijun was standing in the doorway, staring at Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan.

121 You Are A Family Now!!

Lu Lijun woke up and came downstairs after getting freshen up. He started to look for Lu Qiang. When he found Lu Qiang was nowhere, he asked servant and he told him that his brother is outside. On his way to the mansion's doorway, Lu Lijun saw, another servant was moving luggage inside the mansion so he understood that they were having a guest.

When Lu Lijun reached outside, he saw Lu Qiang and others were coming to mansion's doorway. He noticed, Jiang Yuyan was walking side by side with his brother. He couldn't understand why she was there but he remembered about the luggage which servant carried inside so he understood it was Jiang Yuyan and her brother who were their guests.

Lu Qiang smiled and stepped towards Lu Lijun. Jiang Yuyan preferred to step back and let Lu Qiang go alone to Lu Lijun. She walked with Elder Lu. Elder Lu noticed it and smiled to see her understanding nature.

Lu Qiang went to Lu Lijun and asked, "When did you wake up?"

Lu Lijun was staring at Jiang Yuyan but when his brother asked him a question he averted his sight from her and looked at his brother and said, "Just now."

Jiang Yang stepped towards him too and said in his usual cheering way, "Hey handsome man, how are you?"

Lu Lijun smiled and said, "I am fine brother Yang."

Lu Lijun liked Jiang Yang a lot even if he met him only two to three times. Jiang Yang had a personality which could make anyone fond of him. Lu Lijun liked the way Jiang Yang treated him as it was different from how his two brothers handled him.

Lu Qiang asked him, "Did you have breakfast?"

Lu Lijun just shook his head. He then looked at Jiang Yuyan who was standing beside grandpa Lu and was smiling to look

at him.

Elder Lu noticed it and said, “Lu Lijun, from now on Jiang Yuyan is going to stay with us. I invited her here and she is going to study from our home as her school is near to us.”

Lu Lijun looked at his grandpa and heard what he wanted to say. He just nodded as he understood what he said.

Then everyone went inside to the living room and sat in the sofa. Till then other family members, Lu Qiang’s parents and his sister came out from dining room after finishing their breakfast and welcomed Jiang Yuyan. Lu Chen was out of the city with his family.

Lu Qiang took Lu Lijun to the dining room as Lu Lijun had yet to have his breakfast, so till then others talked about the matters from here and there. As usual Jiang Yang was making everyone laugh with few funny stories from the hospital.

After Lu Lijun finished his breakfast, both brothers came back to living room and sat beside Elder Lu.

Lu Qiang’s parents, Lu Jinhai and Lu Jiahui were happy with Jiang Yuyan’s stay in Lu Mansion and they already prepared the best room in the mansion for her as it was ordered by Elder Lu.

When Elder Lu saw Lu Qiang he thought about something and asked to Lu Jiahui, “Have you prepared the room for My L... cough**cough!.. I mean for my dear Jiang Yuyan as instructed by me?”

Lu Jiahui smiled and replied, “Yes father. All arrangements have been done already.”

Lu Qiang was surprised to hear this. He knew Jiang Yuyan was coming to live with them but because of all the mess going around him, he forgot to think about where she will stay in mansion. The thought of preparing a comfortable room for her, didn’t cross his mind and he felt bad.

Lu Qiang then looked at his grandpa with a face, full of questions. Grandpa Lu was sitting to his right side beside him and Lu Lijun was sitting at his left side.

Elder Lu looked back at Lu Qiang and smirked, as indicating him ‘See how thoughtful I am! I beat you this time.’”

Elder Lu then moved his sight from Lu Qiang to Jiang Yuyan with pleasant smile on his face and said, “My Dear, I have prepared the best room in this whole mansion for you and I am sure you will like it.”

Lu Qiang was still looking at his grandpa to know which room he had prepared for Jiang Yuyan and others were waiting for Elder Lu to continue further.

Elder Lu then continued, “You will be staying in the room at second floor which is beside Lu Qiang’s room and that to the best one in this mansion.”

Jiang Yuyan heard this and was quite nervous to hear that her room was beside Lu Qiang’s room. She then nervously replied, “I don’t need the best one I can adjust in any guest room here.”

Elder Lu replied, “You are not guest here anymore. You are a family now. Also, you are My Love so you deserves everything best.”

This time Elder Lu intentionally said ‘My love’ and smirked while looking at Lu Qiang. Elder Lu knew, Lu Qiang won’t stop him from saying it this time as he was doing a favor to Lu Qiang by preparing a room for her to stay next to him.

Jiang Yuyan: “But....”

“No but...In this Mansion my decision is always the final one so you too have to obey me.” Elder Lu didn’t give her a chance to say anything further.

Lu Jinhai too agreed with his father and said, “I promised my friend and your father that I will take care of you like a princes and I always fulfill my promises.”

Jiang Yuyan couldn’t say anything further but to accept it quietly. Her sight met with Lu Qiang who was smiling a little with one corner of his lip curved upward. He was trying to hide it as he didn’t want anyone to notice it.

Jiang Yuyan felt nervous and averted her sight from him but unfortunately this time her sight met with her brothers who winked at her and was smiling in a teasing way. Lu Feng was smiling too but he didn't look at her as he didn't want her to feel awkward.

Finally, Jiang Yuyan preferred not to look anywhere and just lowered her head downward as elders were sitting around there.

Lu Qiang leaned to his right side a little and said to grandpa in a very low voice, "Don't think that you can bribe me with this. If I want, I can directly make her stay in my bedroom."

Elder Lu smiled mischievously and asked in a low voice too, "With Lu Lijun around?"

Lu Qiang shamelessly replied, "At least once he fall asleep in every night."

Elder Lu was speechless. He frowned and said, "Shameless!"

Lu Qiang laughed a little and said, "Didn't you say I take after you."

122 Emotional Jiang Siblings!!

Jiang Yang and Lu Feng were sitting side by side, from where both could see these two blatant men of Lu Family, elder Lu and Lu Qiang who were trying to mock each other. They knew what was going on between these Grandpa and Grandson and were smiling to look at them.

Just then Lu Lijun shook Lu Qiang's hand and said, "But that is my room."

Lu Qiang looked at him and said, "Yes right, but you don't use that room. That's an empty room so let's put it to use and also we should always treat our guest better in all way possible. Don't you think so?"

Lu Lijun nodded and looked at Jiang Yuyan who was sitting opposite to them with her head lowered down. He then looked back at his brother and said, "Okay."

Lu Qiang felt relieved when Lu Lijun approved for it and he patted his head lightly with his hand.

On the second floor of the Lu Mansion, there were only two rooms which were the best ones in the mansion. Other area of the second floor was occupied with the space for gym, gaming room, huge gallery with sunroof, Lu Qiang's study room and an open space to play for Lu Lijun.

Those two huge and stylish rooms belonged to Lu Qiang and Lu Lijun. When Lu Lijun moved into that room, he used to get scared whenever Lu Qiang was on business trips. It was impossible for him to be alone on that entire floor so his parents moved him back to the first floor in the room next to them. Lu Feng too denied moving in that room, so since then that room was vacant.

After spending whole day with Lu family Jiang Yang was ready to go back to Jiang residence. Elder Lu, Jiang Yuyan and

his two friends came out with Lu Lijun to see him off.

Car arrived at the mansions door to receive Jiang Yang. Before moving towards the car, Jiang Yang looked at his sister who looked sad with the thought of her brother leaving her, as it was first time in all these years she had to be without having him being around. Her eyes were moist.

Jiang Yang stepped towards her and hugged her. Jiang Yuyan was trying to control her tears but when Jiang Yang hugged her she couldn't stop them rolling down from her eyes.

Jiang Yang patted her back gently and said, "I am not going far away. I will be here often to see you."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and looked at her brother. He was sad too, but was smiling to cheer her up. She knew her brother was sad inside and was trying to hide it behind his playful smile.

Jiang Yang then whispered in her years, "I think, with Lu Qiang around, you won't miss me much but make sure to avoid that scarf thing as we are not in our home," He then looked at her and winked.

Jiang Yuyan hit Jiang Yang on his chest lightly because of his usual shamelessness but she was not annoyed instead she was smiling to look at him with teary eyes. She knew, she was going to miss her brother and all the things he used to do to annoy her.

Jiang Yang sat in the car and left the Lu Mansion. Jiang Yuyan was standing in her place while looking at the car which was disappearing from her sight. Tears were still rolling down from her eyes as she was watching her brother going away from her.

Others were looking at her but didn't disturb her as they wanted to leave her alone with her emotions for some time.

Lu Lijun too noticed that she was crying. He ran inside the mansion and came back in few moments with one paper box in his hands. He went to Jiang Yuyan, pulled out few tissue papers from it and handed them over to her.

Everyone was surprised to see what Lu Lijun did, because till now he hadn't spoke a single word to her but now he was caring for her as she was crying. Everyone thought that Lu

Lijun didn't like her that's why he was not talking to her but he proved everyone wrong.

Jiang Yuyan was surprised too. She accepted tissue papers and said in heavy voice, "Thank you so much."

Lu Lijun didn't react. He was just standing there with the box of tissue paper in his hands. Once the tissue paper in Jiang Yang's hand was soaked and was not usable, he passed her few more tissue papers from the box again. He continued to do that until she stopped crying.

Lu Qiang, Lu Feng and Elder Lu was looking at both of them all the time but no one disturbed them as they thought it was nice that Lu Lijun was not reluctant to Jiang Yuyan as what they thought before.

Once Jiang Yuyan stopped crying, Lu Lijun handed over that tissue paper box to Jiang Yuyan then went back to his brother and stood beside him. Lu Qiang patted his head and said while looking at him, "Good boy."

Lu Lijun just smiled a little and didn't react much. Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, "Let's go inside."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and everyone stepped in the direction of Mansion. Lu Qiang and Lu Lijun were walking in front and other three were following them. While moving ahead, Lu Lijun turned his head to look at Jiang Yuyan who was walking with her head lowered down and carrying a tissue paper box in her hands.

In a car, Jiang Yang was looking in a side mirror to see Jiang Yuan who was rooted to her place and was looking at the car moving away from her. Jiang Yang continued looking at her through the side mirror until she disappeared from his sight. Once he was not able to see her, tears started to roll down from his eyes too. He was trying to control it but couldn't do it. He just leaned back in his chair with his eyes closed and tears were rolling down from his eyes non-stop.

123 U Made Me Wait...

Once everyone reached inside the mansion, Elder Lu looked at Jiang Yuyan and said while patting her head, “Don’t be sad, we all are here for you.”

Jiang Yuyan just nodded and smiled lightly. Her eyes were still moist. Lu Qiang looked at her and wanted to hug her but he couldn’t because Lu Lijun was there. He just held himself back and said, “If you will keep crying, then I will call Jiang Yang back right now. He then looked at Lu Lijun and asked, “What do you say Lu Lijun? Should we call Jiang Yang here?”

Lu Lijun looked at Jiang Yuyan’s swollen face and said, “Yup!”

Lu Qiang knew, the moment Lu Lijun saw Jiang Yuyan crying, his heart softened a little towards her, so Lu Qiang used this opportunity to make him get closer to her and made him feel like she was one of them; she was now family.

Lu Lijun’s change of behavior was because, Jiang Yuyan was crying for her brother who left her there alone. Lu Lijun could relate to her; he was close to his elder brother Lu Qiang. He felt bad for her, he couldn’t imagine living without his brother.

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said with a light smile on her lips, “I won’t cry.”

Lu Lijun and Lu Qiang looked at each other and smiled to see her smiling.

Elder Lu felt relieved to see Lu Lijun’s reaction and said to Jiang Yuyan, “It’s late now. Go to your room and take a rest. Tomorrow you have to go to the university.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and replied, “Okay Grandpa.”

Elder Lu looked at Lu Feng and said, “Lu Feng, take Jiang Yuyan to her room.”

Lu Feng was little surprised to hear this since he thought it was Lu Qiang’s job, but he understood that Grandpa did this

because of Lu Lijun.

Lu Feng still looked at Lu Qiang to see what he wanted, to which Lu Qiang smiled and nodded lightly as if telling him to go ahead.

Elder Lu was aware of the fact that Lu Lijun showed his soft side to Jiang Yuyan just now, but stretching it too much was not good. So, he didn't ask Lu Qiang to take Jiang Yuyan to her room, instead he asked Lu Feng to do that.

Lu Feng moved his sight from Lu Qiang to Jiang Yuyan and said, "Let's go." He then led the way for her to the second floor and Jiang Yuyan followed him.

Elder Lu wished good night to her and others, then left to his room. Lu Qiang didn't wish her good night, instead he was just looking at her retreating back.

He Qiang looked at Lu Lijun and said, "You must be feeling sleepy. Let's go to your room."

Lu Lijun nodded and both went to Lu Lijun's room on the first floor. By the time they reached the first floor, Jiang Yuyan and Lu Feng already reached the second floor.

On the way to the second floor, Lu Feng suddenly spoke while walking ahead of Jiang Yuyan, "If you want, we can make Jiang Yang to stay here, so that you won't cry to miss him."

Lu Feng was aware that how hard it was for her to live away from her brother as he knew everything about her past.

Jiang Yuyan answered while walking behind him with her head still lowered down, "No! Actually, he sent me here so that he can make me stay away from him."

Lu Feng nodded and said, "Hmm! I know."

Jiang Yuyan lifted her head up and looked at Lu Feng surprisingly and asked, "You know?"

Lu Feng nodded and said, "Hmmm!"

Jiang Yuyan asked again, "Did my brother tell you?"

Lu Feng again replied in same way, "Hmmm!"

Jiang Yuyan asked hesitantly, “Did he tell you everything?”

Lu Feng just continued walking ahead and replied to her questions saying, “Hmmm!”

Jiang Yuyan again asked, “Everything about my past too?”

Lu Feng replied, “Hmmm!”

Lu Feng then stopped walking as they reached to her room. He then turned to look at her and said while looking into her eyes, “You don’t need to feel awkward or hesitant about your past if someone knows about it. It was not your fault. Also, we are friends, so it’s our right to know about the happy and sad moments in each other’s lives. That way we can support each other in our bad times in the future.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded as if she was agreeing to what he with a sad expression on her face.

Lu Feng then smiled and said, “Moreover, I am your brother’s darling, so is it even possible that he would hide anything from his darling?”

Upon hearing this, Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, “Hmm! You are right.”

Lu Feng was happy to see her smiling. He then opened the room’s door for her and said, “Go inside. If there is any problem or you need anything, just call me or Lu Qiang.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Okay!”

Lu Feng then said good night to her and was about leave but he turned and said with a teasing smile, “Actually, you don’t need to call anyone, Lu Qiang will come to you in a while.”

Jiang Yuyan was stunned to hear this. She looked at Lu Feng with her eyes wide open in a surprise. She didn’t expect Lu Feng to tease her because he always had a serious expression on his face and was less talkative.

Jiang Yuyan came back to her senses and said with a smile on her face, “I think, I won’t miss my brother anymore; someone as good as him is here to tease me.”

Lu Feng just smiled and left. He was glad to see her smiling as he didn't want to leave her with sad mood.

Jiang Yuyan entered the room and she was surprised to see it. Everything in the room was arranged and colored in a way, exactly what she liked. It was similar to what her mother planned for her room in Jiang residence. A room that looked lively because of the different beautiful colors used in it.

Jiang Yuyan observed the room carefully and said, "It looks like, Grandpa has been in contact with my mother, so thoughtful!"

Jiang Yuyan then looked around for her bags to arrange her stuff inside the wardrobe, but she couldn't find them. She then walked towards the wardrobe and opened it and to her surprise, all of her things were arranged in the wardrobe properly. She understood maid in the mansion must have done it.

Jiang Yuyan wanted to have a shower so she pulled out a set of clothes for herself from the wardrobe and moved to the bathroom. Before she could enter inside, she stopped as she remembered what Lu Feng said about Lu Qiang before he left.

Jiang Yuyan walked towards her room's door and locked it from inside. She then sighed and went to the bathroom. Jiang Yuyan was tired, so she decided to soak herself in the water.

She spent time while lying down in a bathtub with her eyes closed. She felt relax and after spending some more time there she got out of it. She cleaned herself and stepped out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around her and holding her clothes in her hand. She thought, since no one was here she can put her clothes on in her room

Just as she stepped out of the bathroom while wrapped only in a white towel and carrying her clothes in her hands, she heard a voice, "Looks like you have enjoyed your time in the bathtub so much that you made me wait for a long time."

124 How Did You Come Inside?

Jiang Yuyan was shocked to hear that voice; she immediately looked in its direction. When she saw who it was, she dropped the clothes in her hands on the floor in a reflex as she was stunned to see Lu Qiang inside her room.

Lu Qiang was sitting in a couch with his right leg crossed over the left one and his right hand resting on hand rest of the couch. He smiled mischievously to see Jiang Yuyan's reactions.

Lu Qiang got up from the couch and slowly stepped towards Jiang Yuyan with his hands tucked in his pockets, and said while walking, "It's good that you dropped them; you look good like this."

Lu Qiang then leaned down to pick up her clothes from the floor. He picked them up and threw them on the bed. He smiled and stepped forward to get closer to her.

As Lu Qiang reached near Jiang Yuyan, she moved her both hands to her chest and held the towel tightly that was wrapped around her with her both hands, to prevent it from falling down.

Jiang Yuyan stepped back and asked while looking at him, "How did you come inside?"

Lu Qiang took one step ahead as she took one step back and said, "You are forgetting that this is my territory."

Jiang Yuyan again took one step back as Lu Qiang came closer to her and said, "But I locked the door."

Lu Qiang again took one step forward to move closer to her and said, "Nothing can stop me from coming to you."

Jiang Yuyan was about ask to something but as she took one more step back, she was almost about to bump into a wall but

Lu Qiang held her by waist and pulled her towards him to stop her from hurting herself by colliding with wall.

Lu Qiang was holding her closer to him. Just because her hands were in front of her chest to hold the towel, separated them from each other only that much.

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open because Lu Qiang suddenly pulled her towards him. She held her breath and became stiff.

Lu Qiang then smiled and said while gazing into her eyes, "Look where you are going love. You would have hurt yourself." He said and signaled her to look behind her and said, "Don't hold your breath, you might suffocate."

Jiang Yuyan exhaled and looked back. She realized that she was about to bump into a wall. She then looked back to Lu Qiang and said, "Thank you."

Lu Qiang smiled with one corner of his lips upward and said, "There are other ways to show your gratitude."

Jiang Yuyan coughed and said while averting her sight from him to look downward, "Let me put my clothes on first."

Lu Qiang looked at her lowered face and said, "What's the need? In the end I have to take them off."

Jiang Yuyan was feeling way too shy because of Lu Qiang's bold words. She didn't know what to say. Every time his words left her speechless; she couldn't do anything but keep quiet.

Lu Qiang moved ahead while holding her by her waist and pinned her to the wall. Jiang Yuyan couldn't resist because both of her hands were busy in tightly holding the towel wrapped around her.

Lu Qiang let go of her waist and placed his both hands on the wall on either side of her. Jiang Yuyan was looking at him with her scared kitten like eyes with her hands holding that towel even tighter.

Lu Qiang leaned forward and said in a low voice in her ears while almost touching his lips to her earlobe, "Are you still

scared? This is not the first time we have done this.”

Lu Qiang’s body was almost covering her tiny figure and she was stuck between wall and him.

Jiang Yuyan’s heart started to run even faster upon hearing this and she shrink back as she was almost trying to bury herself in the wall.

Lu Qiang then bit her earlobe which he wanted to do far before. A shiver ran down through her spine and she had goosebumps all over her body.

Lu Qiang noticed those goosebumps and said, “You are too sensitive. I haven’t started yet.”

Lu Qiang knew she was busy in holding the towel securely and she won’t be able to resist him so he started to play with her by taking advantage of her situation.

Lu Qiang kissed on her shoulders which were still not dry completely as she just had a bath. He sniffed into her nape while rubbing his nose in it and said, “You smell damn good.”

He said it and suddenly bite her in the nape.

Lu Qiang’s hot breath and the way he bite her lightly with his teeth, Jiang Yuyan couldn’t help but closed her eyes in a reflex and her breath started to become heavy.

Lu Qiang then started to trace kisses along her shoulder to her neck. Jiang Yuyan was moaning softly with each kiss on her shoulder and neck with her eyes closed, while holding that towel tightly. She was afraid that she might lose her mind and couldn’t hold that towel.

Sweet sounds from her throat made Lu Qiang hold her even tighter and kiss her intensely.

Jiang Yuyan was trying hard to maintain her sanity but what Lu Qiang was doing to her body made it impossible for her. Unknowingly she lift her head up to let him kiss to her neck and Lu Qiang didn’t hesitate to do what he wanted to.

When Lu Qiang was kissing her below her neck, near her collarbone, Jiang Yuyan lost control on her determination to

hold that towel tightly and unknowingly she moved her hands from towel to the back of Lu Qiang's head.

Her towel was getting loosened up but before it could open completely, Lu Qiang held it and stopped kissing her. For a moment, Lu Qiang almost had a thought to let go of that towel but he knew she was not ready for it yet so he held it for her.

Lu Qiang looked at his hand which was holding the towel and then looked at Jiang Yuyan. She was looking at him but she didn't bother to hold the towel; she was staring in his eyes, as she wanted to see what Lu Qiang will do.

125 Biting His Lips!!

Lu Qiang gripped the towel tightly and pulled her closer to him; leaving no space between them. He let go of the towel but it didn't fall down since he was holding her close to him and the towel was stuck between their bodies. He had one hand on her back, while he moved his other hand behind her slender neck. Lu Qiang didn't wait for a moment and sealed her lips with his. He started to suck and nibble them passionately.

Jiang Yuyan's hands were free now so she circled them around his waist making her even closer to him. Jiang Yuyan began kissing him back.

Lu Qiang slipped his tongue in her mouth and both started to taste each other's sweetness by rolling their tongues around. They kept kissing each other until they felt breathless and their tongues became numb. However, Lu Qiang still didn't stop. He let go of her tongue and started to suck her lips again. Sometimes in between, he would hold her lower lip in his teeth and bite it gently while pulling it with his teeth.

While kissing, suddenly Jiang Yuyan bit Lu Qiang's lower lip when she got an opportunity.

Lu Qiang stopped and looked at her with intense gaze and said, "If you bite my lips while kissing, I will go crazy and our clothes will come off."

Jiang Yuyan was looking at him while panting heavily. She didn't know how she did it, but she felt good after biting his lip in the heat of moment. His words didn't affect her instead she stared at his lips while licking her own lips as if she wanted to kiss him more.

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, "As you wish."

Lu Qiang again kissed her and again slipped his tongue in her mouth. It was a long and passionate kiss. The sounds of their

breathing were becoming louder with the soft moaning sound of Jiang Yuyan along with it.

Jiang Yuyan was clutching his shirt before, but now she started to move her hands on his back with her nails burying in his skin. She felt how strong his build was.

When Lu Qiang felt her burying her nails in his skin, he felt even more aroused and started to kiss her ferociously and his lower body was reacting to it, which Jiang Yuyan could feel clearly.

It was not possible to stay still in one place with such an intense and passionate kiss. Both were moving in a rhythm with small footsteps. Being immersed in their kiss so much, they couldn't realize, the towel had been slipped and fallen on the floor.

When their lips parted away after being breathless, the strings of saliva were visible which broke up when they moved their lips further away. Both were panting and stood still with Lu Qiang's forehead resting on hers and feeling each other's hot breaths with their eyes closed.

After moments of being relaxed, Lu Qiang wiped the saliva on Jiang Yuyan's lips with his thumb and smiled to look at her flushed face.

Jiang Yuyan was still feeling dizzy because of the long kiss. She was feeling short for breath and was breathing heavily with her eyes closed.

Lu Qiang kissed her on forehead and hugged her. He realized that her back is bare when he was moving his hands on her back to hug her. He was about to stop his hands but he touched something different on her soft skin on the extreme right side of her back near her lower ribs.

Lu Qiang traced it with his fingers and he came to know, it was a scar which was as long as his palm and it moved from the right side of her back towards the front side of her thoracic cage. He felt puzzled and wanted to see it.

Jiang Yuyan realized that the towel had slipped when she felt Lu Qiang's warm palms on her back. When he touched the

scar on her back and traced it, she knew he might want to see it.

Jiang Yuyan circled her hands tightly around his waist to stop him from being apart from her and to check the scars she had.

Lu Qiang realized she didn't want him to see it so he didn't force. He stood still and just asked while still tracing that scar, "What is this?"

Jiang Yuyan replied while still circling her hands around him to not let him move away, "It's a scar."

Lu Qiang asked again, "It is not a small scratch. It looks serious. How did you get it?"

Jiang Yuyan puzzled with this question but still replied, "It was a bad accident."

Lu Qiang said, "Let me see it."

Jiang Yuyan shook her head lightly and said, "No! They are ugly."

Lu Qiang had change in his expression when he heard it and asked, "They? So it's not just a single scar." And he started to move his hands slowly on her back to check if there are more.

Jiang Yuyan realized she said something that she should not have but she couldn't deny what she just said. "Yes! There are few but I don't want you to see them."

Lu Qiang asked, "Why?"

Jiang Yuyan replied, "I told you, they are ugly."

Lu Qiang sighed and said, "Doesn't matter how they look. I just want to know everything related to you and want to share all your worries. Also, one day, I have to see them you know that."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, "Hmm! But not now."

Lu Qiang didn't force her as she didn't want him to see it. He then asked, "Are they from that worst time of your life?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded and held him tightly after remembering that time. Lu Qiang realized she was not feeling good to

remember it so he didn't ask anything further. He held her tightly and said after kissing her on head, "I am sorry."

Jiang Yuyan heard it and said, "You don't need to be."

126 You Need To Get Punished!!

Both stood like that for a while in each other's embrace. Lu Qiang lifted towel with his feet in his toes and held it in his hands. He held towel on her back side and wrapped it around her without looking at her.

Lu Qiang then took one hand and placed it where she needed to hold that towel and he let go of her by stepping backward. She held it and was staring at Lu Qiang who stepped away from her and was walking towards the bed.

Lu Qiang went towards bed and picked up her clothes which he threw on a bed sometimes before. He walked with those clothes in his hands towards Jiang Yuyan and said, "Here you go."

Jiang Yuyan accepted her clothes and said "Thank you."

Then, Jiang Yuyan waited for Lu Qiang to leave her alone but he was still standing there. Jiang Yuyan looked at him as she wanted to say something. Lu Qiang noticed her gaze then turned around to look in other direction. He was standing with his back towards her and his hands tucked in his pockets.

Jiang Yuyan changed her clothes faster and said, "Done."

Lu Qiang turned around and observed her from head to toe in her night dress which was covering her completely. He said while smiling mischievously, "You look pretty in only a towel wrapped around you."

Jiang Yuyan replied, "Is that so? From now on I'll go everywhere wrapped only in a towel."

Lu Qiang eyes darkened and said, while moving towards her, "looks like once you put on your clothes, you are not that scared."

Jiang Yuyan saw his change in expression and felt like a chill ran down through her spine. She had never seen him like this

before. He looked like a different person.

Lu Qiang held her tightly close to him and said while gazing intensely into her eyes, “Dare you to say that again and I will never allow you to leave this room. No one is allowed to see you like this but me.”

Upon hearing his words and looking into his dark eyes, Jiang Yuyan’s heart started to beat faster. She felt scared and replied while struggling for words, “I..I..was..just ..teasing you.”

Lu Qiang still had the same expression on his face. He knew she felt scared but he didn’t change a bit. He kept looking at her face and was observing her carefully; like he had never seen her before. He traced her lips with his fingers and said, “For such bold words, you deserve to get punished.”

Jiang Yuyan gulped her saliva and said, “P..Pu..ni..sh?”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “As your punishment, I will spend my every night here with you in this room from now on.”

Jiang Yuyan immediately said, “What?”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Yes! If you don’t like it here then I will take you to my room.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “No...no! This can’t be. Go back to your room.” She tried to push him away but she couldn’t because he was very strong as compare to her.

Lu Qiang held her hand which she was using to push him away and said, “In our home, that day, you asked me to sleep with you then what’s wrong now.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “That day, it was different.”

Lu Qiang kissed on her wrist as he was holding her hand and said, “With you, every day and every moment is same for me so let’s go to sleep now.”

Lu Qiang lifted her in his arms and walked towards the bed without giving her a chance to say anything further in a protest. He put her in the bed and switched off all the lights with only night lamp on. Then, he climbed into the bed to sleep beside her.

Jiang Yuyan was just quietly observing him without saying a word. She knew, he wouldn't listen to her but, somewhere in heart, she was happy that he was beside her.

Lu Qiang pulled over a quilt for both of them and turned on his left side to look at her. Jiang Yuyan was looking at the ceiling but when she felt his gaze on her, she turned her head to look at him. He was staring at her face with a pleasant smile on his face. The mild light from the night lamp was making his handsome face to look even more attractive.

Jiang Yuyan also turned on to her right side to face him and had a pleasant smile on her face. She was observing his face. She raised her one hand to trace his eyebrows and said while looking to his eyes, "You have very beautiful eyes. How can a man have such long and dense eyelashes?"

Lu Qiang smiled and said, "Is that so?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, "Even your eyebrows are beautiful that all girls out there would envy you."

Lu Qiang laughed a little to hear this from Jiang Yuyan and asked, "And you?"

Jiang Yuyan replied with a pride in her voice, "Everything that you have belongs to me so I don't."

Lu Qiang was glad that she considered him as hers. He already knew it but sometimes hearing it from the person you love is more pleasant.

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and said, "Yup! I am all yours,"

Jiang Yuyan thought while observing his face, "This man, whom every single girl in this world would want to have for herself, belongs to her. He loves her, care for her and would do anything to see just a simple smile on her face".

Jiang Yuyan just wanted to look at him and admire him without any disturbances and she was actually doing it. She was staring at his face continuously without even blinking.

Jiang Yuyan never thought that in her life, she would see this day when she will actually fall for someone and she would be

this much happy, but Lu Qiang made this possible for her with all the love he had for her in his heart.

Lu Qiang too was staring in her eyes as both were trying to feel what other was feeling. After moments of continuous staring Lu Qiang said, “My eyes are beautiful but your eyes are seductively beautiful that you don’t know what effect they are having on me right now.”

Jiang Yuyan had puzzled expressions on her face as she couldn’t understand what did he mean? She was trying to figure it out and asked, “What’s that.”

Lu Qiang sighed deeply and said, “I bet you would not want to know it.”

Jiang Yuyan was still confused to think what he meant and asked, “Why?”

Lu Qiang replied, “Because this is not the right time and if I tell you right now you have to help me out with it.”

Jiang Yuyan now understood what he meant and felt shy. She said awkwardly in a very low voice, “I..can..help.”

Lu Qiang heard it and smiled. He caressed her cheek with his palm and said, “I would be glad if you help me but right now you don’t need to.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t say anything and just put her hand on his which was caressing her cheek. She then held his hand and kissed in his palm.

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Don’t you have to go to university tomorrow?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded while still holding his palm on her cheek.

Lu Qiang moved closer to her and said, “Let’s sleep now.”

Jiang Yuyan moved her head towards his chest and slept while burying her face in it while smelling his sweet smell.

Lu Qiang too held her close and patted her head to make her sleep soundly. He kissed her on head and closed his eyes too.

127 I Like You In Every Way!!

Next morning, Jiang Yuyan woke up before Lu Qiang. They were facing each other, holding hands in their sleep. She looked at his face. He was sleeping peacefully and his face looked calm. She smiled and raised her hand and touched his long, thick, curly eyelashes. She then touched his pointy nose tip with her index finger and smiled. It was fun for her to do that.

Jiang Yuyan slowly moved her index finger towards his thin but attractive and kissable lips. She touched them lightly and started to trace them. Before she could finish it, Lu Qiang opened his mouth and grabbed her index finger in his teeth.

She was surprised with this sudden move and looked at his eyes; which were still closed.

Lu Qiang opened his eyes and smiled, still holding her index finger in his teeth. He let go of her finger and said, "Taking advantage of a man when he is sleeping can be dangerous for a woman, especially early in the morning."

Jiang Yuyan retreated her hand which was playing with Lu Qiang's face and said, "I was just curious to see how it feels to admire your face when you are sleeping like a baby."

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, "There are other things too, which you can admire, other than my face and I am sure you won't call me a baby after admiring it"

Jiang Yuyan felt awkward as she understood what he exactly meant. She was embarrassed and said, "You should go back to your room as it is morning now."

Lu Qiang frowned to listen this and said, "You are always in a hurry to send me away from you. What if, I go away from you one day and never come back."

Jiang Yuyan heard it and covered Lu Qiang's mouth with her palm to stop him from saying anything further and said, "I will die."

She said it and tears started to roll down from her eyes with the thought of Lu Qiang going away from her.

Lu Qiang realized, he should not have said it when he saw tears in her eyes. He didn't know his simple words could make her cry.

Lu Qiang held her hand which she used to cover his mouth and kissed her palm then said, "I was just kidding. Sorry for making you cry so early in the morning."

Jiang Yuyan was still upset and said, "What if one day, I go away from you?"

Lu Qiang replied in a firm voice, "That is never going to happen. Only death can make us part. If death follows you one day, then I will replace you with myself and will face that death."

Jiang Yuyan replied with tears in her eyes, "Don't ever think about doing such thing! I will never be able to forgive myself if I am the reason for your death."

Lu Qiang smiled lightly and said, "If I won't be able to save you, then I won't be able to forgive myself." He then laughed and said, "Why are we talking about this? Let's continue doing what we were doing earlier."

Jiang Yuyan didn't smile. She still had sad expressions on her face and her eyes were teary too. She said, "Don't ever say such things again."

Lu Qiang wiped her tears with his hand and said, "Then, never ask me to go away from you."

Jiang Yuyan replied, "I won't."

Lu Qiang smiled and asked, "Done crying?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded.

He then paused and said, "Hmm! Now it's time to smile."

Jiang Yuyan looked at him and smiled forcefully.

Lu Qiang looked at her unwilling smile and said, “Not like this love.” He then started to tickle her in stomach and she started to laugh. She begged him to stop. He stopped but till that moment he was on top of her.

Jiang Yuyan was still laughing a little and was trying to push him with her hands on his chest.

Lu Qiang held her both hands and pinned them above her head with his one hand. He was very strong so she couldn't help but stay still in a bed. Both were looking in each other's eyes. Lu Qiang moved his face closer to her but she turned her face to other direction.

Lu Qiang gazed at her with a playful smile on his face and asked, “Are you planning to play with me.”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, “Let me freshen up.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “I like you in every way.”

Jiang Yuyan again said, “Need to brush my teeth.”

Lu Qiang sighed and said, “Again? Did you forget the time in our home?”

Jiang Yuyan blushed and looked at him as she knew he won't listen to her.

As she turned her face, Lu Qiang didn't wait for a moment and kissed her while still holding her both hands above her head.

After playing with her lips by sucking and nibbling them one by one again and again, he slid his tongue in her mouth but this time she was not willing and tried to hide it from his in a protest of not listening to her.

Lu Qiang moved his face backward and said while looking into her eyes with sly smile on his face, “Trying to hide? Give it to me.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with a firm expression and shook her head.

Lu Qiang's smiled mischievously and said, “Really? Let's see how long you can hide. But, if I get you now I will take you to

bathroom and you have to help me with a bath. What do you say?"

Jiang Yuyan changed from a firm to scared expression and she shook her head repeatedly. To look at her scared face, Lu Qiang's smile widened and he said, "Stay still."

On hearing his words, Jiang Yuyan stopped shaking her head but pressed her lips tightly together to not let him kiss her.

Lu Qiang has again taken aback by her new way of protest and said, "Don't blame me. You asked for it; now I am not going to let you go that easily."

Lu Qiang held her chin in his one hand and pinched it a little.

Jiang Yuyan felt a light pain and opened her mouth, just then Lu Qiang began gnawing on her lips.

Lu Qiang kissed her and slipped his tongue in her mouth again. This time he found it and started to roll his tongue with hers; tasting her sweetness. While kissing, he put his body weight on her and she was unable to move even a bit. Lu Qiang still didn't let go of her hands and kissed her with all his might to leave her breathless. After sometime, he stopped kissing. He was panting heavily and was looking at her wanting to do it more.

128 Scars From The Past!!

Jiang Yuyan was feeling tired and dizzy. She was struggling for breath with her eyes closed, breathing heavily. She looked at him with her moist eyes as saying 'no more.'

Lu Qiang let go of her hands and said, "Don't worry, it's enough for now or I won't be able to stop certain someone from assaulting you."

Jiang Yuyan understood what he meant as she could feel him between her thighs.

Lu Qiang gave her a peck on her lips and said, "You should go freshen up now. I will go out once you go to the bathroom. When you get ready, come downstairs for breakfast."

Lu Qiang didn't want her to see him in his morning condition as she might feel awkward, so he preferred to stay in bed. Lu Qiang let go of her by moving from her body to one side of the bed. He laid in bed with the quilt covering him.

Once Jiang Yuyan went to the bathroom, Lu Qiang got out of the bed and left the room. He went to his room and entered the bathroom to have a cold shower first. He stood under the shower with his both hands on wall and head down with his eyes closed. Time passed by but the cold shower was not helping him. It was too much for him to sleep beside his woman for whole night and was not able to do anything. In the end he didn't have any choice but to relieve himself or he felt that he might go crazy.

In bathroom Jiang Yuyan removed her top and stood in front of mirror and was observing the scars she had around her chest. She had one small scar which was below her left breast which was moving to the left along with her rib and also there were few more small scars. She touched those scars one by one and closed her eyes with the pain of her memory which gave her those scars. She looked sad and tears started to roll down from her closed eyes.

Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes and turned to see the right side of her back. There was the scar Lu Qiang found. She touched it with her left hand and traced it. Tears were still rolling down from her eyes. She moved towards the shower and stood under it with her arms circled around her chest with her head lowered down. Her tears were flowing down mixing with water from shower. She was sobbing. She stood just like that for long time.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan finished their shower and came out to get ready. Lu Qiang wore his usual black suit since he had to go to the office. Jiang Yuyan got ready in yellow color Georgette skater dress which was long enough to reach her knees. She didn't have to cover her neck this time as Lu Qiang was careful during their intimate moments to not leave hickeys on Jiang Yuyan's neck. There were only few which were covered by the closed neck of the dress.

Both stepped out of their rooms at the same time. When Lu Qiang came out of the room he saw Jiang Yuyan come out of her room. Their room doors were perpendicular to each other and were not far. Lu Qiang had an east facing gallery while Jiang Yuyan had a north facing gallery.

Both looked at each other and smiled. As Lu Qiang came close to her, He noticed her swollen eyes. When he left her in her room, her eyes looked fine but now they looked little bit swollen and were red too.

Jiang Yuyan realized he was staring in her eyes and must have sensed something, so she averted her site and said, "Let's go. I am starving." She said it and turned around to step into the direction of staircases.

Before she could take second step, Lu Qiang held her hand at her wrist and pulled her towards him to hug her. He didn't say or ask her anything. He just stood still while holding her in his embrace and kissed on her head.

Jiang Yuyan liked to be in his warm embrace. She circled her arms around him.

After a while Lu Qiang loosened his grip around her and asked, "Are you feeling better now?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded and lifted her head up to look at him. She smiled and said, "Much better now."

Lu Qiang too had pleasant smile on his face to see her smiling and said, "Let's go then."

Both went downstairs where Elder Lu and his wife were waiting for everyone to come for breakfast. Grandma Lu was out of the city for few days and she came back home late in last night so she couldn't get a chance to meet Jiang Yuyan.

When Elder Lu saw Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan coming downstairs together, he signaled his wife to look in the direction of staircase and said in a very low voice, "Aren't they looking adorable together?"

Grandma Lu looked in the direction of staircase and said, "Indeed! I guess, what you always wished for, has finally happened."

Elder Lu smiled and said, "You are very smart my wife."

Just then, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan reached to the sofa so Elder Lu and his wife stopped talking about them.

Grandma got up from her sit and stepped towards Jiang Yuyan and said, "Good morning dear. I am glad you are here" and hugged Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan hugged her back and said, "Thank you grandma."

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, "Be with Grandma and Grandpa. I will get Lu Lijun for breakfast in a while."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and Lu Qiang left to get Lu Lijun. Elder Lu looked at his wife and both smiled to see how Lu Qiang was taking care of Jiang Yuyan. Lu Qiang sat in the sofa and talked to the grandparents. Lu Feng also came downstairs while others had yet to arrive.

Lu Qiang was aware of the fact that his negligence towards Lu Lijun was not good thing and now Jiang Yuyan was there so he had to pay better attention to him. Also he had a plan to get him closer to Jiang Yuyan so that he will accept her in their lives.

Lu Qiang came downstairs in some time with Lu Lijun. Lu Lijun again looked at Jiang Yuyan but didn't talk to her while she smiled to look at him.

Everyone went to dining room. As usual everyone sat in their usual places. Grandpa Lu in the head of the family seat and Lu Qiang was sitting exactly opposite to his grandpa at the other end of the table. Lu Lijun and Lu Feng mostly sat on either side of Lu Qiang but this time he sat beside Lu Lijun as he wanted Jiang Yuyan to sit beside Lu Qiang.

Grandpa Lu noticed it and asked Jiang Yuyan to sit in the chair beside Lu Qiang and said, "This is your place from now on. You can only sit there as other chairs are reserved for other family members." Then grandpa Lu looked at Li Lijun and said, "Though they are not present here, we need to respect their absence. Right Lu Lijun?"

Lu Lijun didn't say anything he just looked at Jiang Yuyan and that chair, as if he was approving her to sit there. Lu Qiang asked her to sit and she obeyed it.

Everyone started their breakfast. Lu Qiang was serving food in Lu Lijun's dish and he did it for Jiang Yuyan too. Lu Lijun looked at his brother and her but continued eating his own food quietly.

In between, Lu Qiang got call and it was important so he excused himself from dining table. Lu Lijun looked at Jiang Yuyan's dish which looked empty. He looked in the direction of the door from where Lu Qiang went out.

Lu Lijun waited for his brother but he didn't come so he finally got up from his seat and went to Jiang Yuyan. He stood near Lu Qiang's chair and started to serve in Jiang Yuyan's dish just as Lu Qiang used to do it for him.

Everyone was surprised to see this. Even Jiang Yuyan was surprised to see what was happening. Just then Lu Qiang came back to dining room. When he saw, Lu Lijun serving in Jiang Yuyan's dish, he smiled and went to him. Lu Lijun finished serving her everything little by little, without even asking her what she wanted. He then went back to his seat. Lu Qiang

patted his head and gave him smile to which in reply Lu Lijun smiled too.

129 I Will Do The Same!!

Jiang Yuyan was still in little surprised mode. She was just looking at Lu Lijun who first served her then went back to his seat and smiled to look at Lu Qiang. She came back to her senses and said, “Lu Lijun, thank you.”

Lu Lijun looked at her with mild ghost of a smile on his face but didn't reply. He looked down towards his dish and started to eat.

Jiang Yuyan was getting used to his silent treatment to her so she didn't mind it. But she at least understood that Lu Lijun didn't hate her. The way he showed how considerate he was, when he brought tissue papers for her when she was crying and when he served her to see her empty plate. Though he didn't talk to her, his actions were enough to show that he cared for her.

When Lu Lijun started to eat without responding to Jiang Yuyan's 'Thank you' Lu Qiang looked at her and assured her 'it's fine'. She just smiled as saying 'I know'.

After Breakfast, everyone went to living room except for Lu Lijun and Lu Qiang as Lu Lijun had yet to finish his breakfast. Lu Qiang looked at Lu Lijun who was busy in eating and asked, “Thank you for looking after her as she is our guest.” He then, waited for Lu Lijun's reply to see what he will say?

Lu Lijun gulped down the food in his mouth and took sip of water. He didn't look at his brother and before he could have another bite, he replied, “As elder brother care for her so much, then I will do the same.”

Lu Qiang was taken aback by his reply. He thought, how Lu Lijun noticed that he was specially taking care of Jiang Yuyan. Lu Qiang thought he can give a reason of her being guest in this mansion so she should be taken care of but Lu Qiang couldn't say anything further to hear what Lu Lijun said.

Though, Lu Qiang was shocked, he was happy too. He was glad to see Lu Lijun was fine with his attention to Jiang Yuyan and now, he only had one thing to do. He had to make Lu Lijun get along with her just the way he is with his brother.

Once Lu Lijun finished his breakfast, Lu Qiang and him went to living room too. As they reached to living room and sat in sofa, Lu Qiang noticed, Jiang Yuyan was not there. He turned his sight to everywhere. Elder Lu noticed it, and said, “She went to her room to bring the documents, she need to go through the university today.”

Lu Qiang felt relieved in his heart to listen this and said, “Okay.”

Elder Lu then said, “You have to go with her as it’s her first day to university and it’s my order.”

Lu Qiang already decided to take Jiang Yuyan with him, even if elder Lu hasn’t said that but with elder Lu’s words it made easy for him. Why wouldn’t he do that, after all she was his woman and he had to do this for her and to be with her in every step of her life.

Elder Lu knew, Lu Qiang will definitely go with her but he wanted him to provide easy way for him in front of Lu Lijun and others.

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Okay Grandpa.” He then paused and said, “I will first drop Lu Lijun to his school as it’s his first day of school too, then I will take her to university.”

Lu Lijun was sitting there too. When he listened to it, he got up from the sofa and was about to move towards staircase, Lu Qiang called him, “Where are you going?”

Lu Lijun turned and said while looking at his brother, “I will go get ready for school. Today I want to go with brother Lu Feng.” Then he looked at Lu Feng who was about to leave the room and asked, “Will you come with me?”

Lu Feng halted in his track and turned to look at Lu Lijun. Lu Feng felt like getting caught between these two brothers. He didn’t know whether to say ‘Yes’ or ‘No’. If he had said ‘Yes’ then he was letting down Lu Qiang in his efforts to get Lu

Lijun and Jiang Yuyan closer and if he had said 'No' then it was like disappointing Lu Lijun.

Lu Feng thought for a moment and said something which he never wanted to do but he said as his mother was not around. He pinched the space between his eyebrows and said as he was in a trouble.

Well, My car has broken down so I too was thinking about to get lift from Lu Qiang as I too am going in same way."

Lu Lijun was smart to solve his problem and said, "We have lot more other cars, we can get one."

Lu Feng puzzled and said, "It's about comfort Lu Lijun. You know how picky I am. Lu Qiang's car is the best one and today I want to use it."

Lu Lijun didn't say anything he just looked at his both brothers and went to his room. Others went back to their work except for Lu Qiang and Lu Feng.

Lu Feng sat back in the sofa and said, "I don't know what is going on in Lu Lijun's mind. I know, he is not convinced with my answer."

Lu Qiang replied, "We are forgetting that he is a gifted child and his brain works one step ahead of the children of his age, but he never shows it. Even if he understands what is going on around him, he prefers to ignore it. He is way too smart."

Lu Feng sighed and said, "Hmm! All these years we are just thinking of him as that little kid. Seems like, he is still way too smart." Lu Feng then thought about something and said, "Do you think he had sensed what is going on between You and Jiang Yuyan."

Lu Qiang replied, "I don't think so, but he know that I care for her. I want them to get along well first then only I can tell him the truth."

Lu Feng nodded and said, "You are right."

In some time everyone as in Lu Qiang, Lu Lijun, Lu Feng and Jiang Yuyan got ready to go out. Everyone walked out to get

into the car, just then Lu Qiang cell phone rang. He looked at the number and excused himself.

Lu Qiang answered the call, “Yeah! We are leaving now. We will be there in max twenty minutes.” Lu Qiang then hung up the call and went towards the car.

Lu Feng sat in front passenger seat. Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan sat in back passenger seat with Lu Lijun between them.

Initial plan was to drop Lu Lijun in the school first, but Lu Qiang changed it and decided that everyone will go to see off Jiang Yuyan together. Lu Qiang wanted Lu Lijun to be a part of it as it will help him to make Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan comfortable each other.

They reached to the university. Everyone stepped out of the car. Just then a cheerful voice welcomed them, “Nice to see you all together here, Three Lus and one Jiang.”

130 Note From Lu Lijun!!

Jiang Yang came to see Jiang Yuyan and to say 'All the best' to his sister on first day of her university.

Jiang Yuyan saw her brother and smiled ear to ear. It was surprise for her. She didn't expect her brother to come and visit her like this. Other than Lu Qiang nobody knew that he was coming to visit Jiang Yuyan. Lu Feng and Lu Lijun were happy to see him too.

Lu Feng smiled and said, "Now it's, three Lus and Two Jiansgs."

Jiang Yang smiled to hear it. He moved his sight from Lu Feng to Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan and said, "It would be soon, four Lus and only one Jiang."

Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it but Lu Qiang smiled and replied to Jiang Yang, "It can be all five Lus, if you and Lu Feng think about it."

Upon hearing this, Lu Feng frowned and said, "At least, you don't start it Lu Qiang."

Jiang Yang smiled teasingly and said, "We are the one to start it. I don't mind to change my surname into yours. What say?" He said it and winked at Lu Feng.

Lu Feng frowned again and replied annoyingly, "I am going to Himalaya soon."

Jiang Yang walked towards him and said, "I will follow my darling everywhere."

Lu Feng moved away from him and said, "F**k off."

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were smiling to see them arguing like husband and wife while Lu Lijun was standing beside Lu Qiang with no expressions on his face.

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Lijun who was just observing them and was not reacting at all. She then looked at her brother and

said, “Stop it now.” She said and signaled him to look at Lu Lijun.

Jiang Yang and Lu Feng understood and stopped the topic. Lu Qiang was standing beside Lu Lijun and was smiling to see these two annoying men. When Jiang Yuyan stopped them, he too realized, she did the right thing. He looked at Jiang Yuyan and said ‘Thank you’ in a mute. Jiang Yuyan just smiled lightly to look at him.

Jiang Yang stepped towards his sister and said teasingly, “It looks like you didn’t miss me.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t say anything and hugged her brother tightly. Jiang Yang hugged her back and said, “Missed you too.”

She then looked up and said, “I am glad that you are here.” Her eyes were moist.

Jiang replied, “How can I missed to be with my little sis, when she is about to start new chapter of her life.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, “Thank you brother.” Tears rolled down from her eyes.

Jiang Yang wiped her tears and said in a very low voice that only Jiang Yuyan could hear it, “Is my friend bothering you too much, just tell me and I will beat him up.”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, “Nope! He is not a bother anymore.”

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously and said, “I see! You are not having you favorite scarf with you that explain it.”

Jiang Yuyan was expecting something like this from her brother and replied shamelessly, “He was just being careful this time.”

Jiang Yang looked at her and said with a wide smile, “There there! That’s like my sister, bold and blatant.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to listen it and said, “Always!”

Lu Qiang and other two were looking at these two siblings who were behaving like they had met after years. Lu Qiang

said, “If you two have done then let her go inside.”

Lu Qiang then looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, “You just go to the principle with those documents you are carrying. Your father and I have already informed him and arranged everything for you. If you have any problem then just call me.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “I will!”

Jiang Yang patted her head and said, “I know you will definitely do best with your high IQ brain but still good luck.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, “Thank you brother.”

Lu Feng too wished her saying ‘All the best’ He then looked at Jiang Yang. Both signaled each other and walked towards Lu Qiang’s car living Lu Qiang, Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan back. Driver moved car away from the university gate and it was quite far from where Jiang Yang and others were standing.

As Lu Lijun saw them wishing Jiang Yuyan and then going to the car, so he immediately took out one notebook from his school bag and wrote something in it. Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were looking at him to see what he was doing.

Lu Lijun tore the page from his notebook on which he wrote something. He put his notebook back in his school bag, folded the page in his hands in two folds and gave it to Jiang Yuyan with no expressions on his face.

As Jiang Yuyan accepted that folded page, Lu Lijun turned around and ran towards Lu Feng and Jiang Yang who were standing near the car and were talking about something.

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were surprised to see this. Both were just looking at Lu Lijun who was running away from them towards the car. Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan who was standing on his side and said while looking at the note, “Open it.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and opened the note. In that note, Lu Lijun wrote ‘All The Best’ and drew a cute smiley below that. Jiang Yuyan smiled to see this cute gesture of Lu Lijun and said, “This is the best ‘Good Luck Message’ I have ever received in my life.” She was smiling ear to ear.

Lu Qiang too was happy to see this. He never expected Lu Lijun to be so thoughtful towards Jiang Yuyan. He smiled and said, "After all he is my brother. We have our own ways to charm a lady."

Jiang Yuyan laughed a little to hear it. Lu Qiang looked at her as she was laughing, then he looked back at Lu Lijun and said, "I think, I have to keep Lu Lijun with you more, so that I can see you laugh like this often."

Jiang Yuyan hardly laughed out loud after the incidence in her past. Lu Qiang missed her laughing like in her childhood.

He then looked at her with the change in his sight, the change which she always saw whenever they were alone and Lu Qiang took advantage of it. He smiled teasingly and said, "I too have best ways to say 'Good Luck', want me to show you?"

Jiang Yuyan cleared her throat and said while averting her sight from Lu Qiang, "I need to go inside or I will be late on my first day of university."

Lu Qiang took one step towards her and stood closer. Jiang Yuyan took one step back and said, "We are not in home. People are here to see us."

Lu Qiang replied, "So what? If someone asks you, then say I am your husband."

Jiang gulped down the saliva and said, "Still..."

Before she could say anything Lu Qiang hugged her and said, "All the best and do well, love!"

Jiang Yuyan startled for a moment but she collected herself and said while circling her arms around his waist to hug him back, "Thank you. I will."

Lu Qiang kissed her on head and let go of her. He then smiled mischievously and said, "We will continue this tonight."

Jiang Yuyan blushed to listen it and nodded awkwardly. Lu Qiang asked her to go inside but Jiang Yuyan denied and asked him to go first. Lu Qiang nodded and walked towards his car

where Lu Feng, Jiang Yang and Lu Lijun were talking about something and were laughing.

When Lu Qiang reached there, all sat inside the car as Jiang Yang didn't brought his car because he had some plans with his friends. They waved to Jiang Yuyan and left.

Jiang Yuyan was about to move towards the gate of the university, A black luxury sports car stopped in front of her with the sound of break screech.

“Screeeeech!”

131 He Is A Good Person!!

Same day.. Early morning...

Ming Mansion..

After a breakfast, everyone was ready to go for their work. Ming Lan came downstairs after being ready to go to university. It was the first day of her university but she was one year senior to Jiang Yuyan.

As Ming Lan came downstairs, Elder Lu looked at her and said in his tough voice without any expressions on his face, "Today is the first day of university for Jiang Yuyan. She will be there too, so look out for her and help her if she faces any problems."

Ming Lan nodded and said, "Rest assured Grandpa, she is like a younger sister to me."

Elder Lu didn't reply just nodded a little and started to go through the newspaper in his hands.

Just then Ming Rusheng came downstairs and he heard what grandpa said. He walked towards his sister and said, "Let's go, I will drop you off at the university today."

Ming Lan looked at her brother surprisingly and said, "What? What did you just say brother Rusheng?"

Ming Rusheng sighed and said, "I will drop you off at the university today so let's go now."

Ming Lan Laughed and said, "Wait wait! First let me check if you have a fever or something. Suddenly this much love for your little sister, it's suspicious."

Ming Rusheng frowned and said, "Are you coming or do you want me to send you all the way to university on your delicate legs."

Ming Lan laughed and said, "Ohh I am scared brother. Let's go."

They said bye to their parents and left to go outside of the mansion. As they came out, Ming stopped in her track. Ming Rusheng stopped too and turned back too look at her then asked, “Now what?”

Ming Lan had a serious expression on her face. She walked towards her brother and circled around him while observing him carefully from head to toe while tapping her chin with her index finger. She said, “Now I think about it, it’s not your sudden affection for your sister. I think it’s because of someone else. Ummm! Someone who is so beautiful, that my lovely brother couldn’t move his sight from her face, even for a moment.”

Ming Rusheng frowned, but he knew what his sister was talking about and that what she said was true. He was going to drop his sister to university because he heard his grandpa saying that Jiang Yuyan would be there too. He didn’t know why he suddenly felt like to see her but wanted to go and have just on look of her.

Ming Rusheng didn’t admit it. He walked passed by his sister and said, “You are going by walking on your two legs now as other cars are not available today. All the best!”

Expressions on Ming Lan’s face changed and she followed her brother in hurry and said, “Sorry sorry brother. I was just kidding. I know you love your sister too much.”

Ming Lan smiled with one corner of his lip upward to see his sisters cute and panicked reaction. He didn’t say anything and sat in his car. Ming Lan opened the front passenger door of the car and sat inside it, then he moved car in the direction of University.

When they reached near university gate, Ming Rusheng recognized Jiang Yuyan from afar. He saw she was waving to someone but couldn’t see to whom. Ming Rusheng stopped his car in front of Jiang Yuyan who startled because of the sudden sound of brake screech.

Ming Rusheng and Ming Lan stepped out of the car. Jiang Yuyan was surprised to see both of them but later understood, Ming Lan study in that university too.

Ming Lan stepped towards Jiang Yuyan and hugged her saying, “How are you Jiang Yuyan?”

Jiang Yuyan hugged her back and said, “I am fine.”

Ming Rusheng was looking at Jiang Yuyan. In her yellow color, georgette, skater dress she was looking too pretty and he was trying his best to not look at her continuously. Ming Lan looked at her brother and smiled to see him like this. She then called him and said, “Brother Rusheng, why are you standing there? It’s Jiang Yuyan’s first day of university; don’t you want to wish her?”

Ming Rusheng stepped towards them and said while looking at Jiang Yuyan, “All the best.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled lightly and said, “Thank you brother Rusheng.”

Ming Rusheng just smiled. Ming Lan then asked to Jiang Yuyan, “With whom you came here?”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Lu Qiang, Lu F...”

“Lu Qiang? Are you serious? How can he.....” Before Jiang Yuyan could say further, Ming Lan shouted Lu Qiang’s name but then shut her mouth to looked at her brother before she could say something that could offend him

When both siblings heard Lu Qiang’s name, both had different reactions. Ming Lan blushed to here Lu Qiang’s name while Ming Rusheng tightened his fist with no expressions on his face.

He looked at both the girls and said, “Go inside now.”

Both nodded and stepped inside the gate of university. Ming Rusheng sat back in his car and left.

As both entered inside, Ming Lan asked curiously like a kid, “Lu Qiang personally came to bring you here?”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, “Not just Lu Qiang but there was, Lu Feng, Lu Lijun and brother too.”

Ming Lan’s excitement dropped down a little when she heard it but still she ask, “I heard Lu Qiang is a cold person. He

never smiles and is kind of scary.”

Jiang Yuyan was surprised to hear it and said, “Really?”

Ming Lan replied, “Well, I just heard it through other people. I don’t know him that much. But you were with him, tell me how he is.” She asked eyes filled with curiosity.

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see her curious like a kid and said, “He is not cold. He is a good person.”

Exactly, this is what I felt when I saw him first time in our university. He came here as a guest in one seminar for being a successful businessman. He gave an awesome pitch and I am like his fan now.”

Jiang Yuyan heard it and now she felt curious to know about Lu Qiang. She only knew his side when they were alone or with family but his interaction with others, she was unknown to it. She suddenly felt curious to know his president Lu side.

132 Annoyed Lu Feng!!

In Lu Qiang's car..

After dropping off Lu Lijun to his school, three friends were busy in talking about their stuff. Lu Feng was sitting in front passenger seat while Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang were sitting in back passenger seat.

Lu Qiang suddenly thought about something and asked to Jiang Yang, "Why did you asked me to let go Yuyan alone inside the university. I was planning to visit principle along with her so that she can be comfortable in there."

Jiang Yang smiled and said, "I understand your love for my sister buddy but let her discover the things in new world on her own and trust me I am doing it because this is what, is good for her."

Lu Qiang nodded and said, "Okay! As you are taking care of her for so many years and know what is best for her, so I trust you and I hope whatever you are trying to do, you will get success in it."

Jiang Yang laughed and said, "Whatever I was trying to do for long time, I already succeeded in it and that is just because of you my friend."

Lu Qiang looked at him with questioning sight as asking what he exactly meant, while Lu Feng already understood what Jiang Yang was talking about. He just kept looking in front of him towards the road.

Jiang Yang replied, "See this is it. Now you are asking me to talk shamelessly about what both of you do whenever you find my sister alone."

Lu Qiang understood what he wanted to say. He pinched the space between his eyebrows as regretting why he even dared to ask it. He sighed and said, "My Bad."

Jiang Yang now got another chance to tease Lu Qiang and he didn't let go of it that easily. He looked at Lu Qiang who was

repenting on what he asked. “It’s nothing much. I was just talking about all the blue, green, red marks you planted on my sister’s delicate skin.”

When Jiang Yang said it, both Lu Qiang and Lu Feng frowned but Jiang Yang was still shameless. He looked at Lu Feng and said, “Darling you don’t have to be upset. I will make sure to give you those all blue, green, red marks.”

Lu Feng frowned and said, “Lu Qiang can you throw him out of the car or I will do it myself.”

Lu Qiang smiled and replied to tease Lu Feng, “I don’t want to meddle in between husband and wife.”

Lu Feng frowned again and said, “Not you too.”

Lu Qiang enjoyed seeing Lu Feng annoyed which nobody could ever do. Also, Lu Qiang was aware of the fact that only Jiang Yang was able to get Lu Feng back to his old self and he was thankful towards Jiang Yang for this.

Upon hearing Lu Feng’s words, Jiang Yang again replied shamelessly once Lu Qiang had done talking, “Darling what are you saying? Do you want to be a widower at this young age? I can’t see you hurt from up there. My soul will be wandering around you as I know you can’t live without me.”

Lu Feng frowned and said to the driver in a loud voice which startled him, “Stop the car.”

Driver stopped the car to the road side immediately.

Jiang Yang smiled mischievously and said, “Do you want it now but it’s not the right time to do all those things. We can wait till tonight.”

As driver stopped the car, Lu Feng opened the door and said, “Need to take trash out of the car.” He moved towards back passenger seat door on Jiang Yang’s side and asked him to come out.”

Jiang Yang came out of the car and asked, “Are you that desperate? Is there any good hotel nearby?”

Just as Lu Feng was about to say something, car moved and left both of them on a road. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were

shocked to see this. They couldn't help but to kept looking at the car going away from them in high speed.

When these both got out of the car, Lu Qiang ordered the driver to start the car immediately. Driver obeyed and drove the car faster. Lu Qiang had ear to ear smile on his face and he was observing these two through side view mirror.

When they realized what just happened, Lu Feng couldn't help but said, "What the F**k!" while Jiang Yang was not annoyed. He was not expecting Lu Qiang to do this but he was not upset at all.

Jiang Yang just smiled and said while looking in the direction in which car disappeared in high speed, "Looked like there was too much of a trash in his car. He threw you out too." He said and laughed to look at frowning Lu Feng. "Let him go, he is a busy man."

Lu Feng looked at him with angry gaze and said annoyingly, "This is your entire fault. See where we are standing, now go and look for the hotel if you want."

Jiang Yang looked around and realized why Lu Feng was this much upset. They were standing on deserted road where only few vehicles were passing by and had a little chance to get lift.

Jiang Yang then said to calm him down, "Don't worry we can hire a cab."

Lu Feng laughed sarcastically and said, "Like we have network here and even if we have it, cab don't come to this place. We have to wait for public transport."

Jiang got excited to here it and said, "Wow public transport! What's bad in that?"

Lu Feng sighed and said, "You will get to know. It's not USA where place is more than no of people, it's totally opposite."

Jiang Yang again answered with an excitement and shamelessly, "So what? I will just sit in my darling's lap. Ohhh! How romantic! Also, think about the time we are going to spend together."

Lu Feng frowned again and said, "Will you just shut up."

Jiang Yang made a sad face and said, “oops darling is upset. You can say this with little love in your voice. My heart is delicate to my darling shouting at me.”

Lu Feng ignored him this time and started to walk along the road. Jiang Yang followed him and asked, “Where are you going?”

“To hang myself on one of those trees.” Lu Feng was walking ahead of Jiang Yang. He replied without looking back at him and pointing towards the trees on roadside.

133 Cute Conversation On Cellphone!!

When Lu Qiang's car came far from the place where he left Jiang Yang and Lu Feng, driver of the car asked, "Boss! This road is deserted. It will be hard for them to get back to home. They won't get any cab here and also public transport is too much of a headache."

Lu Qiang understood what his driver was trying to say and replied with no concern for those two on his face, "Don't worry! Even if I will leave them in the center of Sahara desert, these both will get back to home safe and sound."

Driver didn't say much after hearing this. He just replied, "Got it boss."

Lu Qiang then thought about Jiang Yuyan that what she might be doing alone at new place. He decided to call her. He dialed her number but immediately cut the call. He decided to message her as he thought she might be busy and his call might disturb her. He messaged her.

Jiang Yuyan was with Ming Lan and they just came out of the principle's room. As it was the first day of university, it was just an introduction day for new students. Ming Lan was showing Jiang Yuyan campus of the university. From class rooms, canteen, different departments to play grounds and all.

Ming Lan introduced Jiang Yuyan to her friends. When she was busy with her friends, talking about something just then, Jiang Yuyan's cellphone beeped. When she checked her cellphone, she was happy to see it. It was a notification of message from Lu Qiang. She opened a message with wide smile on her face.

Lu Qiang: "How is your first day in university?"

Jiang Yuyan: "It's good."

Lu Qiang: "I hope you are not feeling alone at new place."

Jiang Yuyan: “I am not alone sister Ming Lan is with me.”

Lu Qiang: “Sister Ming Lan?”

Jiang Yuyan: “Grandpa Ming Shihong’s grand-daughter.”

Lu Qiang: “Ohh! Ming Rusheng’s sister?”

Jiang Yuyan: “Yup!”

Lu Qiang: “That’s good, at least you are not alone.”

Jiang Yuyan: “Yup”

Lu Qiang: “Missing me?”

Jiang Yuyan: “We just parted away.”

Lu Qiang: “But I am already missing you.”

Jiang Yuyan blushed to read this message and replied with a pleasant smile on her face.

Jiang Yuyan: “See you in the evening.”

Lu Qiang: “Yup and then see you in your room in the night.”

Jiang Yuyan had goose bumps on her body to read this message from Lu Qiang and she didn’t know how to reply it.

Upon not getting a reply from Jiang Yuyan for next few moments, Lu Qiang messaged again.

Lu Qiang: “You there?”

Jiang Yuyan, “Yes!”

Lu Qiang: “You didn’t reply.”

Jiang Yuyan: “I want to but don’t know how to reply you.”

Lu Qiang smiled to read this and typed.

Lu Qiang: “Just say, yes!”

Jiang Yuyan: “Yes!”

Lu Qiang smiled again to see her how easily she replied with ‘Yes’.

Lu Qiang: “I will take your ‘Yes’ very seriously now, just wait for the night.”

Jiang Yuyan again felt speechless. She just sent him an emoticon which pretended to cover its eyes with hands, like it is shy.

Lu Qiang found that gesture too cute and smiled. He decided to stop and not to tease her more.

Lu Qiang: "See you then."

Jiang Yuyan: "Yup."

Lu Qiang went through the list of emoticons in his cellphone and was trying to send her something interesting. His sight stopped on red heart emoticon. He pressed and was about to send but canceled it and said, "No! It's too childish."

Just then he got message from Jiang Yuyan and it was that red heart which Lu Qiang found childish. He laughed to see it and said, "I forgot, my love is still a child by heart."

Lu Qiang opened emoticon list again and sent her heart. He thought for a moment and said; "Only one is not enough." He sent her multiple hearts. Then he closed the chat and leaned back in his seat with his eyes closed and had pleasant smile on his face.

Jiang Yuyan was about to close the chatting just then she received the message from Lu Qiang. When she saw lots of hearts from Lu Qiang, she couldn't help but smiled ear to ear. She then closed the chat and went back to Ming Lan.

That day Jiang Yuyan met her new classmates and professors. One of the professors took all the students for the detour of their department of business management. When they came back to the class room, Jiang Yuyan's attention caught by one girl in her class, which was different from all the girls in there.

She looked confident and not bothered by others. She was busy in her own world with headphones in her ears and going through the mobile while chewing a gum. She had long black hairs, round and cute face. She had black eyes, fair, spotless and radiant skin. Small nose and pink rose petal like lips.

When Jiang Yuyan was staring at her, suddenly their eyes met. Jiang Yuyan smiled to look at her but she curved her lips up just little and that too forcefully then looked back in her mobile. Jiang Yuyan too didn't look at her again.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang went through too much of a trouble to leave that place. Lu Feng was still frowning because of all the mess he was going through. Anyhow, after spending half a day of struggle, both reached to Lu Feng's place.

As they entered inside the flat, Lu Feng sat in the sofa lazily and said, "I will make Lu Qiang pay for this." and he closed his eyes.

Jiang Yang smiled to listen this and said to tease Lu Feng again, "You should be thankful to him that he gave both of us time to spend together."

Lu Feng sighed and replied, "You are the reason, I am going to make him pay for."

Jiang Yang smiled and said, "Haha! Give me update on how you punished that devil, later."

Lu Feng smiled with cute devilish smile on his face and said, "Haha! He will regret the moment, when he left me there with you."

Jiang Yang too laughed and said, "Haha! I will be ready with my popcorns and beer."

Lu Feng smiled mischievously and said, "Buy a whole carton for me. I am going to enjoy seeing him desperate and frustrated just as I was today."

134 Rivals!!

Jiang Yang replied “sure.” He then observed the flat and said, “Ohh! You are rich.”

Jiang Yang knew, Lu Feng never accepts any money from his family as Lu Qiang already told Jiang Yang about this. He noticed the luxurious flat and knew it must’ve cost a fortune to buy it.”

Lu Feng was sitting on the sofa lazily with his eyes closed because he was too tired from all the things he went through. He replied, “Not much.”

Jiang Yang then thought about something and said, “How is Lu Lijun? I mean,

what was his reaction on seeing my sister in your home with Lu Qiang?”

Lu Feng sighed and replied, “We were worried for nothing. He was absolutely

normal. He just didn’t talk to her but when he saw her crying the day you left her in Lu Mansion, he gave her tissue papers to wipe her tears.”

Jiang Yang couldn’t help but get little shocked and said, “Whattttt?”

Lu Feng continued, “Not just that, during breakfast when Lu Qiang was not there, he filled Yuyan’s dish with food. I was shocked to the extent where I almost had a heart attack!”

Jiang Yang felt surprised hearing this and said, “The way he was behaving with her at the party and even at home, I thought he didn’t like my sister.”

Lu Feng shook his head and said, “No, it’s not about her. It’s just that he is over protective towards Lu Qiang, because he had a few bad experiences with girls, trying to woo his elder brother.”

Jiang Yang laughed and said, “What if he finds out that this time it is other way round. His brother is trying to woo a woman.”

Lu Feng smiled and said, “Haha! I am curious to see his reaction.”

Jiang Yang remembered about morning and said, “In the car Lu Qiang said that Lu Lijun gave Jiang Yuyan a good luck note, I was impressed. Both brothers have their own ways to impress a lady.”

Lu Feng sighed and said, “Lu Lijun is just a kid Jiang Yang.”

Jiang Yang, “When did I say he was not? I am just saying he is as good as his elder brother. It will help him in the future when he will tries to woo someone.”

Lu Feng nodded and said, “I think he will like her and won’t oppose Lu Qiang getting married to her.”

Jiang Yang smiled and said, “It’s all because of my lovely and pretty sister. There is nobody who can’t like her or fall in love with her.” He then paused and said while smiling teasingly at Lu Feng, “See one admirer of hers is already sitting in front of me.”

Lu Feng picked up a cushion from sofa and threw it on Jiang Yang which hit him on his face.

Jiang Yang whined and said, “How can you hurt me darling? My beautiful face might get ruined. Don’t worry if you can’t get my sister, you can have me. I am all yours.”

Lu Feng again threw one more cushion towards Jiang Yang and this time he caught it in his hands and said, “We can do it like a pillow fight. It sounds better between lovers.”

Lu Feng frowned and got up from sofa while saying, “You are impossible.” He then walked inside the bathroom and shut the door with bang.

Jiang Yang was having fun. He was smiling ear to ear to see Lu Feng annoyed like this. When Lu Feng shut the door with bang he said, “Oops! I guess I made darling angry.”

After freshening up and filling up their poor empty stomachs, Lu Feng dropped Jiang Yang at the hospital. Jiang Yang already informed the hospital that he would be coming in the evening instead of the morning. Lu Feng then left for Lu mansion.

Lu Qiang finished his office work and left to pick up Lu Lijun from school. It was not Lu Qiang's thing to do but he wanted to make up for upsetting Lu Lijun. Once he picked up Lu Lijun, he went to Jiang Yuyan's university to pick her up. There was not much distance between the school and university so Jiang Yuyan didn't have to wait much.

Jiang Yuyan got out of her classroom and was waiting for Lu Qiang as he already informed her; he was going to receive her. As Jiang Yuyan was waiting for Lu Qiang, Ming Lan also came out towards the gate.

Ming Lan noticed, Jiang Yuyan standing outside of the gate and waiting for someone. She stepped towards her and asked, "Is somebody is going to pick you up?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, "Yes!"

Just then, again a black sports car stopped in front of both of them. Ming Rusheng had come to pick up his sister.

He stepped out of the car and walked towards both the girls. He smiled to look at Jiang Yuyan and then said to look at his sister, "Let's go"

Ming Lan: "Brother, Jiang Yuyan is waiting for someone so wait for some time to give her company." Ming Rusheng nodded and said, "If you want, I can drop you to your place."

"No need. I guess you won't like to come in the direction of Lu Mansion and breathe the same air." Lu Qiang, who parked his car some distance away from where they were standing, came walking up. Lu Lijun was with him too, staring at the two new people beside Jiang Yuyan. Lu Qiang was aware of the fact of how much the Mings hate the Lus.

Jiang Yuyan was happy to see Lu Qiang while Ming Lan was frozen in her place with her mouth and eyes wide open.

When Ming Rusheng saw Lu Qiang, he didn't say much as he didn't want to create a scene in front of Jiang Yuyan. He just said, "After a long time, Lu Qiang."

Lu Qiang smiled and said, "I am sure, you are overwhelmed with happiness to see me after a long time."

Ming Rusheng smiled too and said, "How can I not? After all I love you a lot."

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, "Yes! I was waiting to receive flowers and gifts from you last valentines day."

Ming Rusheng smiled too with one corner of his lips up and said, "I will make sure to send it on the next."

Just then Lu Lijun shook Lu Qiang's hand and said, "We are running late." Lu Lijun didn't like Ming Rusheng in first sight so he asked his brother to go away from there.

Ming Rusheng looked at Lu Lijun and said, "This little guy is smart to know what to exactly do."

Lu Qiang was nodding to Lu Lijun's request. When he heard Ming Rusheng, he replied, "He takes after his elder brother." Then he looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, "Let's go."

Jiang Yuyan was observing these two men and their conversation. She realized they didn't like each other and it was obvious; since one was a Ming and other one was a Lu, so she ignored them.

Ming Lan was staring at Lu Qiang the entire time. When she heard Lu Qiang's last words, she came out of a daze. Jiang Yuyan was about to leave, Ming Lan stopped her and said, "I have something to ask you. Give me your number. Last time I forgot to take it and....."

Before Ming Lan could complete her sentence, Lu Lijun held Jiang Yuyan's hand and pulled her along with him to go away from there.

Jiang Yuyan was startled by this, but when she saw it was Lu Lijun, she didn't resist and walked with him by allowing him to drag her along with him. Jiang Yuyan turned to look at Ming Lan and signaled her as saying "Tomorrow."

Ming Lan nodded and stepped towards her brother. Ming Rusheng was still looking at those three people's retreating backs. Ming Lan patted her brother's shoulder and said, "Let's go brother. Staring at her won't make her come back here."

Ming Rusheng ignored his sister and sat in the car and both siblings left the place.

Lu Qiang, Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan too sat in their car and left the place. Lu Lijun was sitting in the front passenger seat now while Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang were sitting in the back passenger seat. It was the first time Lu Lijun himself sat somewhere else instead of sitting with his brother. Lu Qiang was surprised to see this. He smiled with the thought that his younger brother was getting smarter day by day.

135 Tonight No Trespassing!!

Lu Qiang, Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun reached home. Lu Feng too arrived at the same time. When Lu Qiang was going inside along with Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan, Lu Feng joined them too.

Lu Qiang smiled and asked while looking ahead, “How was your date?”

Lu Feng replied with no expressions on his face, “Thanks to you, I had best time in my life.”

Lu Qiang smiled teasingly and said, “Really? Then I should help you get it more often.”

Lu Feng smiled mischievously and said, “I am sure, you won’t try to help me from today onwards.”

Lu Qiang sensed something off, the way Lu Feng said it. He turned his head to his left side look at him. Lu Feng too turned his head and smirked while looking into Lu Qiang’s eyes.

Lu Qiang was about to ask what did he mean but Lu Feng left before he could say anything. All went to their rooms to freshen up. Lu Qiang wanted to go to Jiang Yuyan’s room to ask how was her day but he didn’t, as he thought, he will ask her in the night. In the car, he didn’t talk to her much.

During the dinner everyone asked about how Jiang Yuyan’s first day of university was. They talked about lots of things. After dinner, Lu Feng signaled Lu Qiang to meet him in the garden. After talking to his father about some company matters, Lu Qiang went to garden.

As Lu Qiang reached the garden he saw Lu Feng there, near the patio. Lu Qiang stepped towards him. As he reached near Lu Feng, he asked, “Why did you call me here?”

Lu Feng smiled with one corner of his lips upward and said, “Payback time.”

Before Lu Qiang could ask what or react in any way, Lu Feng punched Lu Qiang in the stomach and Lu Qiang whined saying, “What the f**k.”

When Lu Qiang whined while covering his stomach with his palms, a small figure came out from inside the patio and ran towards Lu Qiang.

Lu Feng immediately changed his attitude one eighty degree and said with worried expressions on his face, “What happened to you suddenly? Are you fine Lu Qiang? I told you take care of yourself properly but you didn’t listen to me.”

Lu Lijun was sitting in the patio as Lu Feng asked him to as saying, Lu Qiang will be there too so the three of them can have fun. Lu Lijun obeyed and sat there. When he heard Lu Qiang’s voice, he immediately came out and ran towards his brother.

As Lu Lijun was there, Lu Qiang couldn’t hit Lu Feng back or ask why he hit him? He just frowned and looked at Lu Feng and said, “I am fine.”

Lu Feng, still carrying those sad expressions on his face said, “How are you fine? How painful were your expressions just a moment ago and how loudly you whined! I am sure it’s something serious.”

Lu Qiang almost cursed Lu Feng but controlled himself and said, “No, I am absolutely fine Lu Feng.”

Just then Lu Lijun asked with worried expressions on his face, “What happened elder brother? Are you okay?”

Lu Qiang forced himself to smile and said, “Yes! I am fine. I just had a stomach ache.”

Lu Feng interrupted and said, “Lu Qiang is not fine at all, Lu Lijun. He is saying it, so that you won’t worry about him.”

Lu Qiang gave Lu Feng a killer gaze and then turned his sight to look at Lu Lijun and was about to say, “No Lu Lijun, I...”

“Elder brother, you don’t look so good. Let’s go inside first. We should call the doctor and you should rest.” Lu Lijun didn’t give Lu Qiang a chance to say anything.

On seeing this, Lu Feng smirked and said, “Yes! let’s take Lu Qiang to his room. He needs to rest.”

Lu Qiang was looking at Lu Feng as if he wanted to kill him. He whispered in low voice to Lu Feng, “What are you trying to do?”

Lu Feng too replied in a low voice, “To make you feel, what I felt the whole day”.

Lu Lijun held Lu Qiang’s hand and said, “Let’s go brother.”

Lu Qiang obeyed and followed and Lu Feng too joined them. As it was night everyone already went to their rooms so these three straight went to Lu Qiang’s room.

On the way to Lu Qiang’s room, Lu Qiang asked Lu Feng to leave as he was pissed off with Lu Feng’s action. But Lu Feng didn’t listen and followed them to the room. Again he whispered to Lu Qiang, “Today I am not going to leave you alone. If you want I can call Jiang Yang too, so more the people more the fun.”

Lu Qiang couldn’t help but frowned. As they reached near the room, Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan’s room door. Lu Feng noticed it and said, “Staring at the door won’t open it automatically and get her out of the room.”

Lu Qiang ignored him and was following Lu Lijun. As they entered the room, Lu Feng looked at Lu Lijun and said, “Hurry up Lu Lijun, Lu Qiang is in pain. Get him to the bed first.”

Lu Lijun nodded and said while looking at Lu Qiang, “Elder brother, you should rest.”

Lu Qiang removed his jacket and said, “I am fine Lu Lijun. You can rest assured. It’s late, go to your room and sleep.”

Lu Feng suddenly interrupted and said, “How are you okay. I know you don’t want us to worry about you but as your brothers, we should take care of you. Right Lu Lijun?”

Lu Lijun nodded and immediately asked Lu Qiang to sleep in the bed. Lu Qiang helplessly sat on the edge of the bed. Lu Feng and Lu Qiang were looking at each other. Lu Qiang was

frowning while Lu Feng was smirking and was enjoying to look at Lu Qiang's frowning face.

Lu Lijun was busy in pouring water in glass for Lu Qiang while Lu Feng sat beside Lu Qiang and said with mischievous smile on his face, "Tonight no trespassing."

136 Someone Might Be Waiting!

Lu Qiang looked at him and asked, “What trespassing? What do you mean?”

Lu Feng replied, “No more good time for you tonight. Don’t you dare to go out of this room now?”

Lu Qiang understood what he meant and said in annoyance, “You will pay for this, Lu Feng.”

Lu Feng sighed and said, “First you pay for your sin, then I will pay for mine.”

Lu Qiang was feeling annoyed as he understood Lu Feng’s plan. Just then Lu Lijun arrived with a glass of water in his hands and gave it to Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang accepted it and said, “Lu Lijun, I am fine now. You can go to your room. No need to worry.”

Lu Feng interrupted and said, “Although you are fine right now, anything can happen in the night. So it’s better to have us with you.” He then looked at Lu Lijun and said, “Am I right, Lu Lijun?”

Lu Feng was aware of Lu Qiang’s weakness and that was Lu Lijun. Everyone around them knew, Lu Qiang wouldn’t do a single thing against Lu Lijun’s will and could never say no to him. Each word from Lu Lijun was like a command to him.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “Yes elder brother, I will stay here with you.” He then looked at Lu Feng and asked, “Shouldn’t we call the doctor?”

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng with an angry gaze. Lu Feng immediately replied, “Haha! Doctor? No Lu Lijun, there is no need for a doctor. We just have to look after Lu Qiang the whole night and he will be fine in the morning. Okay?”

Lu Qiang: “__” (Whole night?)

Lu Lijun nodded again and said, “Okay.”

The temperature around Lu Qiang was dropping now, as he was getting angry. He couldn't help but clench his fist and grind his teeth. He maintained calmness on his face because Lu Lijun was there. Lu Feng was enjoying seeing Lu Qiang like this. After a long time Lu Feng felt like his old self and he was enjoying it. It was in that moment he realized how much he missed his old self.

Lu Qiang wanted to go to Jiang Yuyan and spend some time with her and talk to her about how her first day at university was. At the dining table, he heard it already when grandpa and the others asked her about it, but he still wanted to go to her. He wanted to spend time with her and get to know everything that happened, while cuddling her. He wanted to lay beside her in bed and keep looking at her, as he was not able to see her for the whole day and wanted to make up for it. He was expecting those peaceful moments with her but it was all ruined because of Lu Feng.

Lu Qiang felt frustrated and said, “No! Both of you are going back to your rooms. I am absolutely fine.”

Lu Qiang was about to get up from the bed, when Lu Feng pulled him back by holding his shoulder and said, “Where are you going my dear brother? Can't you see both your brothers are worried about you?” He smiled with a smirk while looking at Lu Qiang and then moved his sight to Lu Lijun with a sad expression to say something more.

“If you ignore me it's okay but how can you ignore Lu Lijun?”

Lu Feng got up from the bed and stood beside Lu Lijun and said in a childish way while caressing Lu Lijun's head with his palm, “My poor younger baby brother is ready to compromise his sleep for his elder brother but his elder brother doesn't value it.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Lijun looked at Lu Qiang with a sad expression. Lu Qiang sighed and said, “It's not like that Lu

Lijun, I just don't want to trouble you as I am already fine. You have school tomorrow and you have to sleep."

Lu Feng again spoke in between, "You are right Lu Qiang. Lu Lijun has to sleep but what can he do? He is worried for you."

Upon hearing this, Lu Lijun nodded looking at Lu Qiang, to which Lu Qiang looked at Lu Feng and almost had a thought of killing him in his mind. Lu Feng smiled slyly and said, "But I have an idea where Lu Lijun won't feel worried and can have a good sleep too."

Lu Lijun lifted his head to look at Lu Feng and asked, "Really?"

Lu Feng nodded and said, "Yes! We both can take care of Lu Qiang. We will sleep with him here. You don't have to stay awake as you have school. I will stay awake to look after him and if there is any problem, like he doesn't rest and tries to roam around here or there, then I will wake you up."

At the last sentence from Lu Feng, Lu Qiang frowned as he knew what Lu Feng meant. He was getting restless now. With Lu Lijun around he wouldn't be able to go to Jiang Yuyan.

Lu Qiang just said while looking at Lu Feng, "Someone might be waiting."

Lu Feng smiled mischievously and said, "Ohhh! I will look after it. Don't worry."

He then stepped towards Lu Qiang and said, "Give me your mobile."

Lu Qiang asked, "Why?"

Lu Feng, "Just give it to me. I will solve your problem."

Lu Qiang, "No need. I will do it myself."

Lu Feng then looked at Lu Lijun and said, "He is not giving me his mobile. I don't want anyone to disturb Lu Qiang while he is resting. He needs a good rest or it might get worse"

Lu Lijun stepped towards Lu Qiang and said with serious expressions on his face, "Elder brother, your mobile."

Lu Qiang obediently pulled out his mobile from his pant's pocket and gave it to Lu Lijun. Lu Lijun handed it over to Lu Feng. Lu Feng unlocked the mobile by tracing its lock pattern correctly."

When Lu Qiang saw Lu Feng unlocking his mobile by drawing the correct pattern on the first try, he asked surprisingly, "How do you know my mobile's lock pattern."

Lu Feng smiled mischievously while going through Lu Qiang's mobile and said, "What's so difficult in that?"

Lu Qiang frowned and said while ready to stand up from bed and get his mobile back from Lu Feng, "Give it back to me."

Lu Feng looked at Lu Lijun and said, "Stop him."

Lu Lijun stepped towards Lu Qiang and sat beside him on the edge of the bed and said, "Let brother Lu Feng do his work."

Lu Qiang just silently sat back staring at Lu Feng who was smiling on seeing something.

Lu Feng opened the chatting app in Lu Qiang's mobile and said, "Looks like I ruined the night." He then scrolled the chat and said, "Oops! My eyes are bleeding to see these hearts."

Lu Qiang frowned and said, "Give it back Lu Feng."

Lu Feng typed something and said, "Done!" and handed over the mobile back to Lu Qiang and said let's sleep now.

Lu Lijun too agreed and said while rubbing his eyes with his fingers, "Brother I want to sleep."

Lu Qiang stopped Lu Lijun from rubbing his eyes and said, "Okay!"

Lu Lijun climbed the bed and Lu Qiang checked his mobile to see what Lu Feng did. When Lu Qiang saw it he exclaimed, "What the..." He didn't say it completely and looked at Lu Lijun. He moved his sight back to Lu Feng who was smiling ear to ear.

Lu Qiang pinched the space between his eyebrows and said, "Your days will come too." and he climbed into the bed to

sleep beside Lu Lijun who was already feeling sleepy and was yawning.

Lu Feng laughed and said, “I will wait.” He too climbed into the bed and was about to sleep beside Lu Lijun, when Lu Qiang stopped him and asked, “Why are you here in my bed?”

Lu Feng replied, “So, where do I sleep then?”

Lu Qiang pointed towards the couch in his room and said, “There!”

Lu Feng shook his head and said, “Nope! I want to sleep beside my baby brother.”

He said it and slept beside Lu Lijun without giving attention to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang had a thought to kick Lu Feng hard on his butt and throw him out of the bed but he couldn't convert his thoughts into actions because of Lu Lijun. Lu Lijun was sleeping in between his two favorite brothers.

137 Letting You Go For Her Sake!!

After having dinner, Jiang Yuyan was busy with Lu Bao and Lu Lian. She was talking to them and she saw, Lu Qiang was busy with his father and was talking about something very important. Lu Lijun and Lu Feng went out of the mansion once Lu Feng said something to Lu Qiang.

Jiang Yuyan saw, after a while Lu Qiang finished his conversation with his father and got up from the sofa. He said to his father that he was going to garden. He said it and passed his sight across Jiang Yuyan and said again, "I will be back soon."

Nobody realized that he was saying it to Jiang Yuyan. Jiang Yuyan nodded a little that only Lu Qiang could understand. Then, Lu Qiang went to the garden. After chatting for a while, Jiang Yuyan and Lu sisters said good bye to each other and went to their own rooms.

As Jiang Yuyan entered the room, she closed the door. She was about to lock it from inside but this time she dropped the plan. She smiled with blush on her face and didn't lock the door. She turned around and went to her bed. She laid down in her bed on her stomach with her elbows pinned to bed. Her face was in her both palms. Her feet were waving in air.

Jiang Yuyan was waiting for Lu Qiang. Just like Lu Qiang, she too was waiting to tell him how her first day was in the university. She missed him whole day and after her chat with Lu Qiang, she was anticipating this night to spend with him. She always had peaceful sleep whenever she slept next to him in his arms surrounding her. His embrace was the safest place for her. She felt protected and having this feeling of being protected with the man she loved was a fortunate thing for her.

Jiang Yuyan waited for long. She used to look at the door often to see if Lu Qiang was there. Even if a little sound from

somewhere, made her feel like Lu Qiang had been there. She felt tired of waiting and finally got off from the bed. She picked up her cell phone and checked to see if there was any call or messages from Lu Qiang, but there was none.

Jiang Yuyan took her cell phone with her and went to the gallery to get fresh air. Just then, her cell phone beeped. It was message from Lu Qiang. She had a smile on her sad face to see the notification of message from Lu Qiang. She opened the message and smile on her face disappeared.

“Hi dear, tonight I won’t be able to accompany you as I have to attend something more important. Don’t wait for me and go to sleep.”

Jiang Yuyan felt sad to read this message. She thought, “Something more important in the middle of the night, what can that be?”

Jiang Yuyan felt utterly disappointed and walked back inside the room. When she laid down in the bed, she couldn’t sleep. She was thinking about the message, she received from Lu Qiang, ‘something more important, in the middle of the night’. She just buried her face in the pillow in annoyance and slept like that after a long struggle.

In Lu Qiang’s room..

Lu Qiang was not able to sleep for a single moment as he was just thinking about to go to Jiang

Yuyan. After, hour and half, he realized that Lu Feng and Lu Lijun were in a deep sleep. He got up from the bed being sure of not to make any sound. He was just about to take one step ahead, he heard a voice.

“Elder brother, what happened?”

It was Lu Lijun who woke up with Lu Qiang’s movement in the bed.

Lu Qiang turned to look at him and said, “I—I—was just feeling thirsty.” Lu Qiang felt startled to see Lu Lijun awake.

Lu Feng was not sleeping; he was just lying down with his eyes closed. When he heard Lu Lijun’s voice, he couldn’t help

but smile. He opened his eyes and looked at Lu Qiang with teasing smile.

Lu Feng sat in the bed and said, “Cough**Cough! Lu Qiang, pass one glass of water to me also. My throat is dry.”

Lu Qiang gave him a killer gaze and moved to the table, which had water container on it. He filled one glass with water and passed it to Lu Feng. Lu Feng drank it till the last drop and said, “Yumm! Why this water suddenly tastes so good?” He said it and smiled again to look at Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang replied, “Next time it will taste even better when I will add poison to it.”

Lu Feng replied, “Don’t you ever want to go out of this room and want to keep someone waiting.” He said and passed the glass to Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang accepted the glass and didn’t say anything. He knew Lu Feng was taking advantage of his weakness and that was Lu Lijun. He put that the glass on table back and turn around towards bed.

Lu Feng again interrupted, “Weren’t you thirsty a moment before?”

Lu Qiang frowned and went back to table. He poured the water in glass, drank it and put the glass back with ‘Thud’.

Lu Feng was enjoying it a lot. Lu Feng smiled again. He looked at Lu Lijun who was lying beside him and asked, “Do you want to drink the water too?”

Lu Lijun nodded and sat in the bed. Lu Qiang was about to move towards bed but when he saw Lu Lijun want water he again went back to table and to bring water for Lu Lijun. He put glass back on the table and went back to the bed finally.

All three again were lying in a bed. Time passed like that and Lu Qiang was restless and still was not able to sleep.

Around Three o’clock in the morning, Lu Qiang again noticed, his two brothers were in a deep sleep. Lu Qiang slowly got of the bed. Again just he was about to move towards the door, he heard a voice and halted in his steps.

“This time I am letting you go just for her sake.”

It was Lu Feng. He said it while still his eyes closed. Lu Qiang didn't turn around to look at him. He moved towards the door, opened it and straight went out of his room. As he reached to Jiang Yuyan's room door, he thought about to knock on it but he retreated his hand and directly opened the door.

Lu Qiang went inside the room and saw, Jiang Yuyan was lying in a bed on her stomach and her face was buried under the pillow. He walked towards the bed, smiled to look at the way she was sleeping.

He climbed into it and pulled the quilt on both of them and laid beside her.

Jiang Yuyan felt a movement in bed and woke up. She picked out her head from below the pillow and opened her eyes. To her surprise, Lu Qiang was in front of her and was staring at her face too. She immediately got up and sat down in the bed. She thought it was a dream and pinched herself. It pained and she realized it was not a dream.

138 Aggressive Lu Qiang!!

“Aaaouch!” Jiang Yuyan exclaimed in a pain of pinching herself and said, “Ohh! It’s not a dream.”

Lu Qiang smiled and shook his head. He grabbed her arm and pulled her onto him. Jiang Yuyan was lying on his chest with a shocked expression on her face as he suddenly pulled her towards him. Their faces were closer to each other.

Lu Qiang rubbed her arm where she pinched herself and said, “See, it’s not a dream.”

Lu Qiang was smiling in an amusement to see her adorable reaction. The way, she was surprised to see him suddenly in her bed, the way, she immediately got up and sat in bed and pinched herself on her arm to make sure that it was not a dream. The way she reacted to feel the pain after she pinched herself and that made her realize it was not a dream.

Jiang Yuyan collected herself and asked surprisingly while still lying on his chest, “W-When did you come.”

Lu Qiang caressed her cheek with his thumb and replied while looking into her eyes, “When you were busy in dreaming about me.”

Jiang Yuyan replied in disagreement, “I was not dreaming about you.”

Lu Qiang asked with one corner of his lips curved upward, “Really? Then what were you dreaming about?”

Jiang Yuyan answered with an unpleasant expression, “Why should I tell you? I didn’t ask you, what was the important thing you had to do in the middle of the night.”

Lu Qiang smiled upon hearing it and said, “There was nothing.”

Lu Qiang sensed the jealousy in her voice and intentionally didn’t answer.

Jiang Yuyan's face became sad to hear it and decided to get away from him. Just as she was about to move, Lu Qiang held her by waist and pulled her even closer to him so that she was now on top of him.

Jiang Yuyan lightly punched on his chest to let her go but Lu Qiang didn't listen. He held her hands tightly, flipped her down in a bed and now he was on top of her.

Jiang Yuyan was not able to move even an inch because of his body which was covering hers entirely by putting its weight on hers.

"Were you trying to go away from me?" Lu Qiang asked with his one eyebrow raised in a question.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and looked in other direction. It was clear that she was upset with Lu Qiang and had questions in her mind about the message on her cell phone.

Lu Qiang knew it but wanted to play around for some time and didn't bother to explain it to her.

Lu Qiang looked at her face which was turned to left side and said, "Look at me."

This time Jiang Yuyan shook her head and didn't look at him.

Lu Qiang smiled and asked, "You don't want to look at me?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded but still didn't look at him.

Lu Qiang called her again, "look at me, Yuyan!"

This time it worked. Calling her name was the best thing he could do at the moment but he didn't know what effect it had on her. For her, it worked like she was under his spell.

Jiang Yuyan looked at him when Lu Qiang called her name and said, "Don't call my name."

Lu Qiang asked, "Why?"

Jiang Yuyan replied while looking at him, "Just don't call it."

Jiang Yuyan wanted to show how upset she was but he was ruining her plan. She knew if he continued like this, she might end up doing what he wanted."

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, “Yuyan!”

Jiang Yuyan frowned and said again, “Don’t say it.” But Lu Qiang didn’t listen. He continued to call her name. “Yuyan! Yuyan! Yuyan! Yu...!” Jiang Yuyan covered his mouth with her palms.

Jiang Yuyan was trying to stop him but he didn’t. So, she had to do something, to stop him from saying her name again and again. She tried to stop him by covering his mouth with her palms but he didn’t stop. Lu Qiang continued to say her name with his mouth covered.

“Yu.ya.n! Yu.yaa.n!”

Jiang Yuyan finally removed her palms from his mouth and said, “Stop now.”

Lu Qiang was enjoying to see her angry actually he was enjoying her behavior of being jealous so he decided to not clear her doubt. He called her name again.

“Yuyan! Yuyan! Yu...”

But this time something surprising happened, which made Lu Qiang stop saying her name.

Jiang Yuyan’s patience was wearing thin; so when Lu Qiang called her name and nothing worked, she sealed his mouth with her lips.

Lu Qiang didn’t expect this. He was surprised and stopped calling her name. Also, it was impossible for him to say a single word when his mouth sealed by his woman. What more he could wish for.

Jiang Yuyan kissed him, until she made sure, he was silent. Once she realized, he had stopped, she parted her lips away from him. Lu Qiang was unhappy when she stopped kissing. He smirked and said, “That’s it?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and was feeling shy, thinking about what she had just done. She didn’t know what to do. She had stuck under his strong body and couldn’t even escape from there. She knew what was going to come next as she had already provoked the lion.

Lu Qiang didn't wait for a moment and kissed her. Jiang Yuyan wanted to resist as to show she was upset; but the moment Lu Qiang's lips covered hers, she forgot everything. She lost her resolution to not let him do what he wanted and allowed herself flow with him. Lu Qiang's touch was something that her body couldn't resist even if her brain decided otherwise.

Lu Qiang was aware of the fact that she wouldn't be able to resist him once he kissed her and the same thing happened. When he realized, she was not struggling and submitted herself to him, he turned his gentle kiss to passionate one.

Lu Qiang started to suck and nibble her delicate lips passionately. This time it was more than just being passionate. There was a change in the way he kissed her and it was way too different from before. He was more aggressive and was using his teeth more. He bit her lower lip while kissing but he didn't stop.

Jiang Yuyan was kissing him back when he kissed her, but in a moment she realized that something was different with Lu Qiang. He was aggressive, totally different from his gentle self. Even when they shared passionate moments before, he had never been like this. When he bit her lip, she felt a current of pain and buried her nails in the skin of his shoulder as he was not letting her go. She wanted him to stop but he didn't.

Lu Qiang was still kissing her, but the moment he felt the taste of iron in his mouth, he stopped. He looked at her hurt lower lip then moved his sight to look into her eyes and said, "Next time, don't give anyone a chance to say that, he will drive you to home."

139 You Have To Kiss Me First..

Upon hearing what Lu Qiang said, Jiang Yuyan remembered the incident from outside of the university when Ming Rusheng asked to drive her home.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Qiang surprisingly and said in a firm voice, "I didn't."

Lu Qiang caressed her hurt lower lip with his thumb and said while looking into her eyes with darkness in his eyes and cold expressions on his face, "I know, but just remember, I can't see someone else doing things for you that should be done only by me."

Jiang Yuyan nodded a little and said, "Okay! And I too don't want someone else to do anything for me other than you."

Lu Qiang then smiled to listen her words. The darkness in his eyes and cold expressions on his face from moment before had gone and he looked like his usual self.

He smiled mischievously to her and asked in a gentle way, "So, shall we continue love?"

Jiang Yuyan was surprised to see the change in his emotions. A moment before he was aggressive and there was darkness in his eyes, and now he was so gentle and there was love in his eyes for her. She couldn't help but say surprisingly, "Huh?"

Lu Qiang caressed her lips again with his thumb and said, "I will take it as 'Yes'."

Lu Qiang said it and didn't wait for her response. He immediately covered her lips with his and started to ravish them once again one by one. He was being careful with the hurt lip but was still kissing her passionately.

Jiang Yuyan responded back to his kiss. She forgot the pain she felt a moment before and didn't care about her hurt lip.

Her hands, which rested on his shoulder, moved to circle his neck, to pull him closer and to kiss him with the same passion.

Lu Qiang slipped his tongue in her mouth and started to play along with her tongue. Jiang Yuyan too was playing with his tongue. Both of their tongues were rolling in a sync. After moments of sharing a passionate kiss and feeling breathless, both finally parted their lips.

They were panting with their eyes closed and Lu Qiang was resting his forehead on hers. Lu Qiang looked at her, but her eyes were still closed and she was struggling for breath. When she finally opened her eyes, after a few moments, Lu Qiang moved his face back a little and said, “You are getting better at kissing.”

Jiang Yuyan blushed to hear it but replied boldly, “I was never bad to start with.”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Agreed!” and turned around on the bed with her on top of him and said, “Why don’t you show me an even better version by kissing me in your own way and dominate my lips and tongue.”

Jiang Yuyan blushed and said while trying to hide a smile on her lips, “I don’t know, what is the better version?”

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and asked, “Really?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Hmm!”

Lu Qiang replied, “You will understand it, just kiss me once.”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, “No! That was enough.”

Lu Qiang again replied, “But with you, nothing is enough for me, so kiss me now.”

It was always Lu Qiang who initiated the kiss and Jiang Yuyan responded to it but this time Lu Qiang wanted her to kiss him and let himself flow with her.

Jiang Yuyan again shook her head and said, “I am tired now.”

Lu Qiang didn’t force her and said, “Okay! This time I am letting you go, but you have to kiss me first after this and I am not talking about those small pecks. I want a passionate one.

From tomorrow on I won't kiss you or touch you unless you kiss me first.”

Jiang Yuyan replied with a smile and said with a happy tone, “That is what I want, so I am never going to kiss you on my own.”

Lu Qiang raised his eyebrow in question and said, “Really?”

Jiang Yuyan replied with confidence, “Yup! And you can go out in the middle of the night to do something more important.”

It was clear that, Jiang Yuyan still had questions about that message and she was expecting an answer from Lu Qiang; even though she didn't want to ask him straightforwardly. Lu Qiang laughed and said, “Haha! It was nothing.”

Jiang Yuyan felt annoyed and said, “I didn't ask.”

Lu Qiang replied, “Ohh! But it looked like it. If you don't want to know then I am fine with it.”

Jiang Yuyan frowned to listen it and said, “Let me go. I am feeling sleepy.”

Lu Qiang could sense she was still upset and it was getting worse with each passing moment but he was enjoying it. It was a proof that she too liked him and loved him though she haven't confessed to him yet and he was waiting for the day when she will say those three precious words to her.

Upon hearing her, Lu Qiang replied, “Okay! But you have to kiss me first then I will let you go.”

Jiang Yuyan looked him with angry gaze and said, “Never!” and she was ready to get off from him.

Before she could move away from him, Lu Qiang held her tight by her waist. He turned and sat on the bed with Jiang Yuyan sitting in a cross position with him. She was startled with his sudden move, but she understood what was he doing so she ready to follow him. They were facing each other but Jiang Yuyan's face was little higher as she was sitting in a cross to him in his lap.

Lu Qiang looked at her and said, “This your punishment for not obeying me.”

Lu Qiang held her tight by her waist with one hand circling around her and his other hand was on her back just behind her chest. For him, it was easy to get access of her neck as she was sitting in a cross.

Before Jiang Yuyan could react to his words, Lu Qiang straight started to kiss her neck and she swallowed her words back. First he kissed her gently on her neck then started to suck it but made sure not to do it harshly or leave any mark on her.

As Lu Qiang started to kiss her neck, Jiang Yuyan couldn't help but moan softly.

Her hands involuntarily moved to the back side of his head and was running through his hairs.

Upon hearing her soft moaning, Lu Qiang tightened his grip around her waist and his other hand was pressing her chest against his face. He was still just kissing on her neck and slightly below her collar bones and made sure not to go down even if he wanted to do it desperately.

After assaulting Jiang Yuyan's neck for a while, Lu Qiang traced kisses on her jaw line, from her ears to her lips. When he reached to her lips, Jiang Yuyan was ready to kiss get kissed. Like every time she was anticipating a kiss but it didn't happen.

Lu Qiang stopped near her lips almost touching them with his and feeling her breath but he didn't kiss her. Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes and looked at him.

Lu Qiang moved his face back and smirked. Jiang Yuyan was still looking at him as she was in a daze. She couldn't understand, why he suddenly stopped. She was looking at him with a puzzled look written on her face.

Lu Qiang knew what she was thinking and replied, “You said, this is what you want. You don't want me to kiss you, so I won't.”

Jiang Yuyan was flabbergasted with his behavior. She didn't expect him to stop suddenly after making both of them feel so

high, wanting more. She couldn't say anything or deny what she said a few moments before.

Lu Qiang loosened his grip around her waist and her back and allowed her to go and said, "I won't kiss you until you kiss me first."

Jiang Yuyan moved back and sat in the bed with disappointment written on her face.

Lu Qiang looked at her disappointed face and asked, "Are you okay?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded and asked while looking at him, "I am fine but are you?"

Lu Qiang replied, "No! I am not but I will be fine with a cold shower." he said as he got out of the bed to go to the bathroom.

Jiang Yuyan looked at his retreating back and said, "But..."

Lu Qiang halted and replied without turning back before she could continue her sentence, "Don't worry, I will be fine."

Lu Qiang said as he went straight to the bathroom.

140 Enjoy The Nice View!!

Jiang Yuyan was sitting in bed with a long face. She was a little embarrassed with what happened moments before. She herself said to Lu Qiang that she don't want to get kissed but when the moment came she did otherwise. More than him, she was anticipating for them to kiss.

Jiang Yuyan moved back in bed and sat with the support of the bed's headrest. She grabbed one pillow and kept it on her lap and rested both her hands on it. She was staring at the balcony of her room. It had glass doors and windows so she could see the view outside. She was waiting for Lu Qiang to come out.

After sometime, Lu Qiang came out of the bathroom in a white towel, loosely wrapped around his waist. Jiang Yuyan looked at him with her eyes wide open and dropped her jaw in shock. It was the first time for her to see him half naked. Even though they have been close to each other so many times, Lu Qiang never removed his clothes.

Jiang Yuyan couldn't move her sight from Lu Qiang's body and observed him from head to toe. She realized how well toned and strong his body was. She had just felt it by touching through his clothes, and she knew he had a good one but never got the chance to see this Greek god's body.

As Lu Qiang came out of the bathroom, he was about to move towards the wardrobe but he looked at Jiang Yuyan who was sitting on the bed while resting with the support of the bed's headrest. He noticed the way she was looking at him, with her eyes wide open and her jaw dropped. He smiled to see her mesmerized expressions as she was watching something extraordinary that she haven't seen in her entire life.

Lu Qiang turned in her direction one step ahead and said with a ghost of a smile on his face, "Do you want me to remove this towel too?"

Jiang Yuyan came out of the daze to hear his words and reacted, "Huh?"

Lu Qiang repeated again, “I said, do you want me to remove this towel too? I don’t mind though.” He said it and moved both his hands towards the towel as he was ready to remove it.

Jiang Yuyan understood what he meant. When she saw his hands were ready to remove the towel, she exclaimed, “No no no! Stop! Stop!”

Lu Qiang was enjoying her reaction and said, “Why? I am sure, you will like what is inside here.” And he again moved his hands to remove the towel.

Jiang Yuyan covered her eyes with her hands and said, “I don’t want to see.”

Lu Qiang replied, “Choose your words wisely my love. A moment before, you said you don’t want to kiss, so I didn’t, and now you are saying this. Don’t you ever want to see it?”

Jiang Yuyan replied while still covering her eyes with her hands, “It’s not like that, just not now.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Okay! I won’t. You can open your eyes.”

Lu Qiang was just having fun teasing her. He knew she was not ready and never planned to remove the towel.

As he said it, Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes and looked at him. She gulped down her saliva, looked at his extraordinarily attractive body, and immediately averted her sight from him towards the balcony.

Lu Qiang smirked and stepped towards the wardrobe and was ready to open it. Through the corner of her eyes, Jiang Yuyan noticed where Lu Qiang was going. She turned her head to look at him and asked, “Why are you going to my wardrobe? There is nothing for you there.”

Lu Qiang looked back at her and asked with his eyebrow raised in question, “Really?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Why would I have your clothes in my wardrobe.”

Lu Qiang turned back to the wardrobe and said while opening it, “Let’s see.”

Lu Qiang didn't open the main part of wardrobe, instead he opened the small side door which was also a part of the main wardrobe. In that side part, it's small shelves have sets of clothes in it and those were men's clothes.

Jiang Yuyan was surprised to see it. When she came to stay here, she checked everything in that wardrobe and this small part of the wardrobe was empty and she didn't check it later, let alone used it.

She asked surprisingly, "W-What are your clothes doing here? When did you bring them?"

Lu Qiang pulled out a set of clothes for himself and replied, "I told you, this is my territory and I can do anything anytime."

Jiang Yuyan tried to say something again, "But how....."

Lu Qiang ignored her question and said, "I am going to change into this. Enjoy the nice view."

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan covered her eyes again with her hands. She was waiting for him to put on his clothes faster and let her know once he had done so, but she heard the sound of a door closing. She removed her hands from her eyes and looked up. Lu Qiang was not there. She felt panicked that he left. He left without saying bye or wishing Good Night to her.

Jiang Yuyan got out of the bed and ran towards the door of her room. She opened it and went out to look for him. Lu Qiang was not outside too. She looked at the closed door of his room and stepped towards it.

Jiang Yuyan had been to Lu Qiang's room when she was young but she never went to his room in the present. She felt little anxious to knock on his room's door. She stood up in front of a door for moments while thinking whether to knock on the it or not. After thinking for a while, she sighed and raised her hand to knock the door. Just as she was about to knock, a hand stopped her from doing so by holding her hand at the last moment.

141 I Won't Leave You Ever, Promise!!

Lu Qiang saw Jiang Yuyan was covering her eyes to avoid seeing him changing clothes so he went inside the bathroom to do so. He was just teasing her. After having enough fun and teasing her, he decided to go back to the bathroom to change his clothes.

When Lu Qiang came out of the bathroom, he couldn't find Jiang Yuyan inside the room. He checked the balcony but she was not there too. He then moved to the room's door and came out of the room. As he came out of the room, he saw Jiang Yuyan was standing in front of his room's door and was about to knock on it. He immediately stepped towards her and stopped her from knocking on the door by holding her hand at the last moment.

Jiang Yuyan was startled as someone suddenly held her hand. She turned her head to look at the person standing behind her. She surprisingly asked, "Lu Qiang you..."

"Shhhhhh!" before she could say anything more, Lu Qiang stopped her as he was worried that both his brothers who were sleeping inside might wake up. Lu Qiang held her hand and took her back to her room and closed the door. Lu Qiang gave out a sigh of relief as he was able to stop Jiang Yuyan at the right moment.

Once they went inside the room, Jiang Yuyan asked, "Where were you?"

Lu Qiang replied casually, "I was in the bathroom."

Jiang Yuyan then said with a sad expression on her face and in a low voice, "But when I heard the sound of the door locking.. I..thought.. that.. You..." she couldn't complete the last line as she was still feeling sad.

Lu Qiang completed her sentence, “That I left without even saying bye to you.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at the floor and nodded with a sad expression on her face.

Lu Qiang went closer to her and hugged her. He patted her head and said, “I won’t ever leave without telling you. How can I? I always want, whenever I am leaving, that I would be looking at you with a smile on my face when I say bye to you.”

Jiang Yuyan hugged him back tightly as if he might leave her if she loosened her grip. Those few minutes when she thought he left, was like torture for her. The thought of him, leaving her alone suddenly crossed her mind and she buried her face in his chest and was about to cry. She couldn’t stop the tears rolling down from her eyes.

Lu Qiang felt something moist on his chest. He realized, she was crying. He patted her back and said, “Don’t worry, I am not going to leave you alone ever.”

Jiang Yuyan looked upwards towards him with her crying face and asked, “Promise?”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Promise!” He then freed his one hand and said while showing her his pinky finger, “Pinky promise!”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see it as she remembered the memory from their childhood and said while holding his pinky finger with hers, “Pinky promise!”

She was smiling a little so Lu Qiang suddenly asked with a teasing smile on his face, “I thought, we can differentiate between the locking sound of a room’s door and a bathroom’s door.”

Jiang Yuyan hit him on the chest. Tears were still rolling down from her eyes and she replied with choked voice, “It’s...all your fault.. You keep messing around with my mind.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Ohh! My bad.”

Lu Qiang then wiped her tears and kissed her forehead. He looked at her teary eyes. He didn't want her to cry because of him ever, but somewhere in his heart, he felt happy to see her crying at the thought of him leaving her.

It showed, how much she loved him and can't live without him, which applied to Lu Qiang too. He was just waiting for her love confession to him. He was waiting for those beautiful moments when she would open her heart for him and accept him.

Lu Qiang kissed her on her cheeks, near the corner of her lips. He stayed like that for a moment, to feel it with his eyes closed. He moved back his face and said, "I desperately want to kiss you right now but I don't want to go against your will." Then he let her go.

Jiang Yuyan felt bad to hear it. She decided to tell him that she was just kidding and it's okay if he kiss her. She finally opened her mouth and said, "No..I...."

"It's okay, you don't need to force yourself. Let's go to sleep now." Before Jiang Yuyan could say anything, Lu Qiang stopped her intentionally as he knew what she was about to say, but this time he wanted her to feel bad and make her do what she exactly wanted. Also, he desperately wanted her to kiss him on her own and dominate him.

Lu Qiang carried her in his arms and took her to the bed. He put her on the bed and climbed on it too. He covered both of them with a quilt. Both were sleeping while looking at the ceiling. Suddenly, Jiang Yuyan looked at him by turning her face to her left side towards him.

Lu Qiang knew, she was looking at him. He didn't look at her and said, "Rest assured, I am not going to kiss you or touch you so sleep without having any doubt in your mind." he then closed his eyes.

Jiang Yuyan was feeling really bad. She was thinking that she made him upset and also she was already used to being closer to him whenever they were alone. She kept looking at him and asked, "Are you upset with me?"

Lu Qiang replied with his eyes closed, “Why would I be?”

Jiang Yuyan continued, “Because of what I said about not wanting to get kissed.”

Lu Qiang replied with still his eyes closed, “No! I am not upset. Rest assured.”

Jiang Yuyan asked again while looking at him, to make sure, “Really?”

Lu Qiang replied, “Your wish is my command.”

Upon hearing it, something came to Jiang Yuyan’s mind and said, “What if my wish is otherwise?”

Lu Qiang reacted just as, “Huh?”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “What if I want you to kiss me always without thinking for a second.”

Lu Qiang opened his eyes, turned his face to his right side and said while looking at her, “What if, I want you to kiss me at least once on your own and dominate me, and what if I want you to do whatever you want with me without having a second thought.”

Jiang Yuyan gulped down saliva upon hearing it and said in a low voice, “I..I will try.”

Lu Qiang turned on his side to look at her. Jiang Yuyan too turned on her side and both were lying while facing each other. Lu Qiang caressed her cheek with his hand and said, “Still, you don’t have to force yourself. Things will happen on their own and we will make it happen.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded with a smile and put her hand on back side of his palm which was caressing her cheek. Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Sleep now. It’s already late.”

Jiang Yuyan heard it but was still looking at him as not wanting to sleep anymore.

Lu Qiang asked, “What? I am not going to kiss you until I get one from you and that is too passionate one.”

Jiang Yuyan rolled her eyes on him and said, “You should get it from that ‘More Important’ with whom you were busy in the

middle of the night.” Jiang Yuyan said it and turned to sleep while facing in other direction instead of Lu Qiang. She was sleeping while facing her back to him.

Lu Qiang smiled and was about to laugh on her reaction but he controlled it. He moved towards her in a bed and hugged her from behind. His hand was surrounding to her stomach and front side of his body was touching to back side of hers.

Jiang Yuyan tried to move away from him by lifting his hand which was surrounding her stomach but Lu Qiang tightened his grip and pulled her even closer to himself.

Later, Jiang Yuyan didn't struggle and let him hold her. She too liked being in his embrace so she preferred to sleep quietly. Both closed their eyes and fell asleep just like that.

142 Potraying A Future!!

Four days passed by. It was a weekend, Saturday. Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were sharing the same room during these days but still Lu Qiang didn't try to get close to her or kiss her while Jiang Yuyan still had that message in her mind. Both just slept while hugging each other. In fact, it was just Lu Qiang who hug her from behind and sleep like that.

These four days, it was just the same routine that Lu Qiang used to drop Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan to their schools and retrieve them back after their time was up. Jiang Yuyan was feeling frustrated because Lu Qiang didn't explain anything to her about that message, so she didn't talk to him properly. In a car even, Jiang Yuyan always kept looking outside of the window and didn't even look at him once and Lu Qiang was enjoying it. He found her cute whenever she was angry.

Saturday morning...

Jiang Yuyan got ready to go to out in the garden to get some fresh air. She wore a loose white top and blue jeans short. It was summer so she preferred to wear loose and comfortable clothes. With that she wore blue sneakers as she decided to go for a walk too.

When Jiang Yuyan came out of her room, she noticed, the lace of her right shoe had been loosened up. She stopped and bent down to tightened the lace of her shoe.

At the same time, Lu Qiang too came out of his room to go down stairs. When he saw Jiang Yuyan, tightening her shoe lace, he went closer to her and said, "Beautiful morning and the weather is really nice today, isn't it?"

Jiang Yuyan was still looking down towards her shoe and was adjusting the whole lace. When she heard Lu Qiang, she nodded and said, "Yes! It is."

Lu Qiang was still standing in the same place and was looking at her. He continued, "Both of you must be feeling good to get

fresh air, finally.”

Upon hearing the words, ‘both of you’ Jiang Yuyan felt puzzled. She lifted her head up to look at Lu Qiang and asked curiously, “Both of you?”

Lu Qiang replied while looking at her loose neckline which was making it easy to get little view of her bosoms as she was in bent down position, “Yes! Both of them.” He said and pointed towards her chest with his chin.

Jiang Yuyan followed his sight and she realised, he was looking at her bosoms who were slightly peeking out of her inner clothes and were visible because of the loose neckline of her dress.

When she understood what Lu Qiang was referring to, she immediately straightened her top and stood up then said, “You pervert! How can you look at my.. cough**cough.. so shamelessly.”

Lu Qiang smiled and replied in a very firm voice, “First thing, I have a full right to be a pervert and be shameless with you. Second thing, whatever we have, it belongs to both of us, so I have a right on them too, whether I see them or touch them. Third thing, I was not staring at them. When I came here, they were staring at me so, I just decided to have little chat with them.”

Jiang Yuyan felt speechless with this reply from Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, “And they are not ‘cough**cough’. There is a proper word to refer them. Do you want me tell you?”

Jiang Yuyan frowned to hear it but didn’t say anything. She turned around and left in hurry towards the staircase. Lu Qiang was smiling to see her annoyed and he too went downstairs.

Jiang Yuyan reached to the garden and she was still frowning. She decided to go towards the patio and sat there alone to calm herself down. Just as she was on the way to the patio, she saw, Lu Lijun was sitting on the table under the tree and he was drawing something.

Jiang Yuyan went closer to him and stood beside him to see what he was doing. Lu Lijun was drawing a scenery in front of him and that was the patio and pond around with a small bridge attached to it. He captured the beauty in front of him perfectly in his drawing and Jiang Yuyan was impressed to see it.

Jiang Yuyan felt surprised to see that Lu Lijun can draw this well at such a young age. That drawing looked so lively and realistic like it had been drawn by an expert artist.

Jiang Yuyan couldn't stop herself from praising Lu Lijun and said, "You draw really well. It's so beautiful and realistic."

Lu Lijun who was immersed in his drawing, turned his head to look at Jiang Yuyan when he heard her. He looked at her with cold expressions and didn't say anything. He looked back towards the table and picked up another drawing book which was occupying the remaining space on the table. He kept that book on one side to make a space on the table to sit.

Jiang Yuyan understood that he made space for her to sit, even though he didn't ask her to sit there. Jiang Yuyan sat beside him and was watching the view, which Lu Lijun was drawing with so much concentration in the early morning.

Lu Lijun didn't give attention to Jiang Yuyan once she sat there and continued to do his work with full concentration.

Jiang Yuyan too felt like to draw something. She looked at Lu Lijun and asked, "Can I draw something too?"

Lu Lijun didn't say anything, instead he picked up a drawing book he kept aside moments before and handed it over to Jiang Yuyan with sketch pencils.

Jiang Yuyan accepted it and said, "Thank You." And she too started to draw.

Both were busy in drawing, sitting side by side without disturbing each other. After sometime, Jiang Yuyan finished her drawing and said, "Done."

Lu Lijun looked at her and Jiang Yuyan showed him what she drew. Lu Lijun was quite surprised to see her drawing as it was too good and he didn't know Jiang Yuyan was a really good

artist. He kept looking at the sketch and Jiang Yuyan could see he liked it and was amazed to see it.

Jiang Yuyan drew the view of patio which Lu Lijun was drawing but there was an addition to it. With the view of patio she drew back view of Lu Lijun sitting on the bench and was drawing. She drew as it was, what she saw when she was coming to the garden.

Lu Lijun took back the drawing book from her hands. Jiang Yuyan felt worried to think what would happen that he took the drawing book from her hands. Just then Lu Lijun stood up and stepped towards the back side of bench. He was standing at some distance on back side of Jiang Yuyan, from where he could see Jiang Yuyan sitting on the bench.

Lu Lijun started to draw while looking at back side of Jiang Yuyan. Jiang Yuyan understood he was drawing so she didn't look back to him, instead she picked up a drawing book on which Lu Lijun was drawing earlier and was looking at his drawing carefully observing it.

When Lu Lijun finished drawing, he came back to the bench, sat in his place and gave that drawing book back to Jiang Yuyan. Jiang Yuyan accepted it and saw what Lu Lijun drew.

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see it and said, "It's cute and looking so beautiful now."

Lu Lijun added to what Jiang Yuyan drew in her sketch. Jiang Yuyan just drew Lu Lijun, sitting on the bench alone and was drawing but Lu Lijun drew Jiang Yuyan sitting beside him and was drawing too.

It looked like a complete picture. A patio surrounded by beautiful scenery and Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan both were sitting on a bench while looking at patio.

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "Wait, I have something more to add into it and started to draw it. Lu Lijun was again busy in what he was drawing initially.

Once again, Jiang Yuyan finished her drawing and showed it to Lu Lijun. Lu Lijun looked at the drawing and then moved his sight to their left side where Lu Qiang was standing under

one tree and was looking at them with smile on his face with both his hands tucked in his pockets.

Jiang Yuyan added Lu Qiang into that sketch too. Now it looked like, Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan were sitting on a bench under a tree while looking at the patio and Lu Qiang was looking at them from far afar with the smile on his face.

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun, both were unaware of the fact that they unintentionally both drew their future in that drawing book. A future, which would be making both of them suffer a lot.

143 Younger Lu Qiang!!

Lu Qiang came downstairs too, when Jiang Yuyan left. He followed her to the garden. When he reached there, he saw Jiang Yuyan was standing beside Lu Lijun and she was talking to him about something. He halted in his steps and decided to see how both of them will behave with each other. He was specially curious about Lu Lijun's behavior.

When Lu Qiang saw, Lu Lijun made space for her to sit beside him, he felt surprised and what happened next was the most beautiful thing he had seen. He never expected that his cold hearted younger brother would allow anyone to be with him other than his two elder brothers. He was glad to see them starting to get along with each other.

While Lu Qiang was busy in observing these two, someone suddenly came from behind and put a hand on his shoulder. Lu Qiang turned his head to see who it was? It was Elder Lu who was standing beside him and was looking at Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun with a pleasant smile on his face.

Lu Qiang too had a pleasant expressions on his face, which grandpa didn't fail to notice. Elder Lu smiled and said while looking in the direction of Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan, "I think, your biggest concern is going to vanish soon."

Lu Qiang too was looking in the same direction as Elder Lu. He replied, while looking at Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan, who were still busy in drawing, "I think so too grandpa."

"Me too grandpa" They heard one more voice and turned to look at it. It was Lu Feng. He stepped forward and stood beside grandpa and said again, "I think Lu Lijun will accept Jiang Yuyan as a part of Lu Qiang's life and his life too."

Grandpa replied while looking at them two, "I am sure about it. Moreover, Jiang Yuyan is a lovely girl who can make anyone like her."

Lu Qiang replied, “Agreed!” while Lu Feng nodded to what grandpa said.

All three stepped towards Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan. As they reached near them, Lu Lijun picked up his drawing book and showed to Lu Qiang what he drew. Lu Qiang knew, Lu Lijun can draw very well but still he was surprised to see this new drawing and he praised him, “It’s too good Lu Lijun.”

Jiang Yuyan stood up to greet Elder Lu when she saw these three people.

“Good Morning Grandpa!” She said it with smile on her face and moved her sight from Elder Lu to Lu Feng and wished him good morning too but she didn’t look at Lu Qiang. Lu Lijun looked at her as she wished everyone but his elder brother. Jiang Yuyan noticed him staring at her and she understood why. She immediately looked at Lu Qiang and wished him good morning.

Lu Qiang smiled to see this and wished her back, “Good Morning!”

Lu Lijun picked up a second drawing book from the bench on which Jiang Yuyan was drawing before. He showed what both of them drew together to Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang liked it and said, “Both of you make a great pair of artist. It’s really good.”

Grandpa Lu and Lu Feng felt curious too and wanted to see what these two drew in a book. When they saw it, grandpa replied, “Indeed, it’s beautiful. Both of you should work together in the future.” Lu Feng too agreed to what Elder Lu said.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Lijun and asked, “What do you say Lu Lijun. Will you work with me?”

As usual everybody was expecting Lu Lijun to reply by nodding or he will just ignore her but he surprised everyone and said, “Yes! You draw really well.”

It was almost a mild shock for these four people and the happiest person there was Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan who was able to melt his ice cold brother and mouthed ‘Good Job’ to Jiang Yuyan to which

she just smiled in reply.

It was time for breakfast so everyone went inside the mansion and went to the dining room. Everyone sat in their respective chairs and this time Jiang Yuyan sat beside Lu Qiang without any hesitation as Lu Lijun was not that cold to her.

After finishing half of his breakfast, Lu Qiang excused himself and went out saying he had something important to do. Jiang Yuyan heard it and again thought about that ‘Something important’ message. She felt upset again but tried to cover her sadness. Lu Lijun again noticed that Jiang Yuyan’s dish was empty and she was not eating properly. He looked in the direction of the door but his brother was not there so he stood up from his chair and started to serve her food.

After being done with serving, he didn’t go back to his chair, instead he sat in Lu Qiang’s chair and said to Jiang Yuyan, “Brother will take time to come back, so eat your meal properly.” he then replaced Lu Qiang’s dish with his and started to eat while sitting on Lu Qiang’s chair.

When everyone heard this, they looked at Lu Lijun. He was behaving like Lu Qiang. All the words he said and the way he said in a cold voice, it all looked like Lu Qiang. Jiang Yuyan was still looking at him in surprise so Lu Lijun looked at her and said in a cold voice again, “Eat!” and started to eat his own food with no expression on his face.

Jiang Yuyan felt like he was a younger version of Lu Qiang. She couldn’t help but obey him just as she listened to Lu Qiang while others were still looking at Lu Lijun’s serious behavior as he never behaved like this with anyone. They too felt like they’re looking at a younger version of Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang came back after a while. He saw that Lu Lijun was sitting on his chair so he sat in Lu Lijun’s chair. In reality, Lu Qiang did it intentionally. He wanted to see, if Lu Lijun will do the same thing for her today as what he did yesterday while having breakfast, and he was glad to see that Lu Lijun cared for Jiang Yuyan too.

144 Understanding Lu Lijun!!

As it was Saturday, everyone was free and had lots of free time. Everyone was in the living room after having a breakfast. Elder Lu asked Lu Qiang, “Why don’t you take Jiang Yuyan out as she hasn’t been here in China for a long time and hasn’t seen new things here.”

Lu Qiang nodded and was about to say ‘okay grandpa’, just then Jiang Yuyan said while looking from Lu Qiang to Elder Lu, “No need grandpa, I will go with brother Yang later.”

Lu Qiang looked at her with a questioning gaze with his eyebrow lifted upward but he preferred not to insist and said, “Whatever she wants grandpa. I too have ‘MORE IMPORTANT’ work to do.”

Lu Qiang intentionally gave stress on words ‘More Important’ words and smiled mischievously while looking at Jiang Yuyan. Jiang Yuyan ignored him, excused herself and went back to her room.

Lu Lijun went out with Lu Feng to feed fishes in the pond and the others went to their rooms. Now it was just Elder Lu and Lu Qiang, who were sitting in the living room.

Elder Lu looked at Lu Qiang and said with serious expressions on his face, “Control yourself and don’t trouble her more.”

Lu Qiang too replied with a serious expressions on his face, “I am not troubling her anymore, that’s why she is upset.”

Expression on Elder Lu’s face changed from being serious to a curious one and asked, “Really?”

Lu Qiang replied, “Uhuh!”

Elder Lu suddenly changed his attitude to one eighty degree and said, “Then, what are you doing here. You should always do what your woman wants.”

Lu Qiang gave out a deep sigh and said, “You are right, but I want my woman to do what she wants.”

Elder Lu understood what Lu Qiang was trying to say, so he didn't say anything further and just nodded to what Lu Qiang said. Elder Lu was aware of Jiang Yuyan's past and her present condition so he could understand the difficulties in Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan's relationship, and he was trying his best to get these two closer to each other.

After a while Lu Qiang excused himself and went upstairs too. He went straight to Jiang Yuyan's room and stood in front of her room's door to knock on it.

At the same time, near the pond in a garden..

Lu Feng and Lu Lijun were sitting near the pond and were feeding the fishes. Lu Feng looked at Lu Lijun and asked, “I guess, you enjoyed drawing with Jiang Yuyan.”

Lu Lijun was smiling while looking at his favorite fishes and replied, “Yes! She is very good in drawing.”

“Yeah! That's right.” Lu Feng paused for a while and said while looking at Lu Lijun's smiling face, “So you like her now?”

Lu Feng thought, it was the right opportunity to know what was in Lu Lijun's mind. Lu Lijun was a sweet boy and he was not cold hearted but sometimes he acted like that before knowing the person completely and when it was about a girl then he was more like little iceberg.

Lu Lijun replied while still looking at the fishes, “Not really but I don't dislike her either.”

Lu Feng looked back towards the pond and said, “That's good.”

Both were busy in feeding fishes and suddenly Lu Lijun spoke, “But I know elder brother likes her, so I will like her too so that he won't feel bad.”

Lu Feng was surprised to hear it. He suddenly felt that Lu Lijun was not that little kid anymore. He understands everything clearly. Lu Feng didn't say much and just replied

with a smile, “Good” and both continued with what they were doing. Lu Feng preferred not to stretch this topic more.

Lu Lijun’s behavior with Jiang Yuyan in dining room was surprising for other family members too. Nobody said anything in front of Lu Lijun. When they returned back to their rooms, they couldn’t help but discuss about it

In Lu Jinhai’s bedroom..

Lu Jinhai and his wife Lu Jiahui were sitting in a couch while Lu Jinhai was going through few documents. His wife suddenly said, “Aren’t you surprised with Lu Lijun’s behavior with Jiang Yuyan. I thought, he didn’t like her much.”

Lu Jinhai replied while going through the documents in his hands, “He never disliked her but was just being protective towards Lu Qiang and also he needed time to know her.”

Lu Jiahui asked, “Ohh! So he thought, Jiang Yuyan will covet his brother? Haha! My younger son is really something.”

Lu jinhai replied, “Your elder son is really something too and the younger one is just following his path.”

Lu Jiahui thought about something and said, “Yes! Today on dining table, he was acting like Lu Qiang. I never saw him behaving with anyone like this before.”

Lu Jinhai nodded and said, “Well, at that moment, Lu Lijun was trying to take responsibility for his elder brother’s job and moreover, Jiang Yuyan is a lovely girl. She can make anyone like her and make them her friends too “

Lu Jiahui replied while looking at her husband, “I like her too, i just wish, if we can keep her in our home forever. I mean... you know what I mean right?”

Lu Jinhai laughed and said, “Haha! Don’t worry. She is going to be in our house forever.”

Lu Jiahui had puzzled expressions on her face and asked, “Are you planning to....”

“Not me, it should be planned by our elder son.” Lu Jinhai replied before his wife could complete her sentence.

Lu Jiahui sighed and said, “Then it’s impossible. You know Lu Qiang, he never pays attention to any girl.”

Lu Jinhai put the documents in his hands back on the table and said while looking at his wife, “She is not just ‘any girl’ my dear and I know my son, he knows how to pick up a gem.”

Lu Jiahui asked, “So you mean, he will select her?”

Lu Jinhai replied, “Well, he already did.”

Lu Jiahui asked curiously, “Really? How do you know?”

Lu Jinhai replied, “He is my son and I can tell what’s in his mind in a one glance,”

Lu Jiahui felt excited and said, “If it’s really true then I am happy. if I could, i would want him to marry her tomorrow.”

Lu Jinhai replied, “Don’t be excited. She is too young to get married and firstly let them decide what they want.”

Jiahui replied, “Okay.”

Lu Jiahui was happy to know, her son actually like someone. She too was fond of Jiang Yuyan so she had no problem if her son liked her and wanted to marry her in future.

145 Whom She Will Marry?

In Lu Lian's room..

Lu sisters too were discussing about Lu Lijun while lying in a bed.

Lu Lian was thinking about the scene in the dining room and said, "I am surprised to see Lu Lijun today in the dining room."

Lu Bao nodded and said, "Me too. That little devil was acting all high and mighty today. I felt like i was looking at brother Lu Qiang from his childhood days."

Lu Lian: "Well, I thought so too and I am surprised to see him taking care of Jiang Yuyan, towards whom he always behaved coldly."

Lu Bao: "I am shocked too and now I envy her to be able to get attention from Lu Lijun. All our brothers take care of her but never paid attention to their two lovely sisters. I am feeling like crying now"

Lu Lian: "But I like her. She is a lovely girl. I wish, she would marry one of our brothers"

Lu Bao: "Yeah! I like her too and I liked this idea too, but with whom she should get married?"

Lu Lian thought for a while and said, "I think she should marry brother Lu Qiang."

Lu Bao shook her head and said, "Brother Lu Feng suits her too."

Lu Lian: "You are right but I want her to marry brother Lu Qiang. They will look good together. Haven't you noticed the way brother Lu Qiang treats her on the dining table. Have he ever served anything in our dish?"

Lu Bao: "Yeah! I noticed it and I guess other family members did too."

Lu Lian: “Yes! That’s why it should be brother Lu Qiang.”

Lu Bao: “I don’t want to argue whether its brother Lu Qiang or brother Lu Feng. I will settle with Lu Lijun. Let her be married to him and we both won’t feel bad about her not going with our choices.”

Lu Lian: “Don’t be stupid. He is too young”

Lu Bao laughed and said, “Haha! I know, but like we said before, both our brothers fall for the same girl but Lu Lijun will end up taking her away.”

Lu Lian felt a little angry to hear it but she knew, Lu Bao had the habit to joke around so she didn’t say anything. She joined her too.

Lu Lian: “Yeah! I remember your senseless jokes but it would be funny to see it in reality.”

Lu Bao: “We are sisters but our brothers don’t even give importance to us except for brother Lu Han. I wish he could stay here with us.”

Lu Lian you are right, “Even Lu Lijun is no different from them.”

Lu Bao laughed and said, “As a punishment to not look after his two elder sisters, let Lu Lijun settle with Jiang Yuyan, a woman older to him. Haha!”

Lu Lian too laughed and said, “Yeah! It’s sad but let him get punished.”

Lu Bao replied, “What’s sad? That little devil deserves it. He took away brother Lu Qiang and Lu Feng from us. He deserves it, always loved by everyone as we are nobody.”

Lu Lian looked at Lu Bao with questioning sight and asked, “Are you really that angry with him.”

Lu Bao laughed and replied, “No silly! How can I be? He is our little cute brother. Even though he is an iceberg, I love him a lot.”

Li Lian sighed and said, “I too, love him a lot.”

Lu Bao smiled and said, “But still I want him to end up with Jiang Yuyan. Haha!”

In Elder Lu’s bedroom...

Elder Lu was standing near the window and he was staring outside with no expression on his face, with his hands tucked in his pockets. It was habit of Elder Lu to do so whenever he used to think about something or not thinking about anything.

Lu Shuang, Elder Lu’s wife was sitting in her chair. She looked at her husband who seems to be in deep thought and asked, “What are you thinking about?”

Elder Lu didn’t look back at his wife and answered while still looking outside of the window, “I am thinking about Lu Qiang, Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun.”

Lu Shuang asked, “Is there anything to worry about? As I saw in dining room, Lu Lijun seemed to be nice to her.”

Elder Lu sighed and replied, “Yes he is and I am happy, as he might easily accept Jiang Yuyan as a part of Lu Qiang’s life.”

Lu Shuang asked, “Then what are you worried about?”

Elder Lu replied with serious expressions on his face, “I don’t know why but I have a feeling that, the lives of these three is going to be entangled into each other, that it would be difficult to sort it out.”

Lu Shuang had worried expression on her face and said, “Don’t say something like this. Whenever you say anything that should not happen, it always becomes a reality. Did you forgot the night when Lu Chen entered into our lives as our son. That night too, you said something that you should not have.”

Elder Lu looked at his wife, laughed and said, “Haha! What do you think, I am a future reader or what? I am just having a hunch that I told you because you asked me.”

Lu Shuang frowned and said, “Don’t ever tell me anything like this.”

Elder Lu smiled and said, “Okay dear! I won’t”, he then moved away from the window and sat on the couch and said,

“I am just waiting for the day when Jiang Yuyan will come to this house as Lu Qiang’s wife.”

Lu Shuang replied, “I know it’s your dream but are they together now or is there still any problem. I mean Jiang Yuyan, is she fine now?”

Elder Lu replied, “Yes they have certain issues but it will get sorted out soon. I trust my grandson. He will make everything fine for her.”

Lu Shuang nodded to what Elder Lu said as she too agreed to it.

146 Don't You Want To Taste Me?

Lu Qiang was standing in front of Jiang Yuyan's room door. He knew she was angry and he had to do something about it. He knocked on the door and waited for a while to let Jiang Yuyan open the door. Usually, he directly enters into her room after knocking once, but this time he waited for her as she was angry. After waiting for some time, Lu Qiang knocked on the door again but still there was no reply. Finally, he opened the door and entered inside. He saw, Jiang Yuyan was lying on the bed on her stomach with her head buried under the pillow. He stepped towards her and called her name but Jiang Yuyan didn't reply.

Finally he too laid down beside her on the bed and said, "I too am feeling sleepy at this hour of the day, let me get my pillow to hug it and sleep."

Lu Qiang turned to his side in the direction of Jiang Yuyan and put his arm on Jiang Yuyan's back as she was lying on her stomach and his leg on her thighs.

Jiang Yuyan still didn't move. Lu Qiang moved closer to her and hugged her tightly from the side but it made her breath quite difficult. She finally reacted and removed that pillow from her head.

When Jiang Yuyan came to her room, she was upset with what Lu Qiang said. She went to her bed, laid down on it lazily and covered her face with pillow. After some time, she heard a knock on the door but she didn't get up to open the door as she knew it was Lu Qiang. She let him stand there to knock on the door again but didn't bother to get up and open the door. It was her way of showing him, how mad she was.

When Lu Qiang slept beside her, she was aware that he might do something to annoy her so she decided not to react to any

of his mischief, but when he hugged her tightly, she was unable to breathe comfortably and she had to react.

Jiang Yuyan frowned, looked at him and said, “Are you trying to kill me?”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Nope! I am just hugging my pillow. It’s not my fault if my pillow is too delicate to handle my cuddle.”

Jiang Yuyan tried to turn and get out of his hold but Lu Qiang held her even more tightly and said, “I am feeling sleepy and I need my pillow” and closed his eyes.

Jiang Yuyan frowned again and said, while still trying to get out of his hold, “Go and get the other one.”

Lu Qiang held her tightly in one place by circling his arm and leg around her to stop her from moving. When she stopped struggling, he turned her on her back in just one move, went on top of her and said, “But I like this pillow more.”

Jiang Yuyan again tried to move but she couldn’t as Lu Qiang put almost all of his body weight on hers as to not let her get away.

He then looked into her eyes and asked, “Why are you upset?”

Jiang Yuyan looked in the other direction by averting her sight from his and said with a cold voice, “I am not.”

Lu Qiang replied, “Yes, you are and this pretty face of yours is shouting to me saying ‘I am upset, I am angry’.”

Jiang Yuyan knew she can no longer deny the fact that she was upset, so she decided to accept it and said, “What if, I am? Does it matter to you?”

Lu Qiang replied, “Of course it matters to me, and that’s why I am here with you right now. So tell me now.”

Lu Qiang knew what was bothering her so he thought he should clear it with her but he wants to hear from her first. He was glad to see her jealous and enjoyed it but he had enough so preferred to stop it and asked her directly.

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, "It's nothing and I don't want to tell you."

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, "If you don't tell me, I will kiss you, which you don't want me to do, I guess."

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, "I won't tell you."

Lu Qiang moved closer to her and said, "So you want me to kiss you, right?"

Jiang Yuyan felt like she's been trapped. She didn't want to tell him as she herself was confused on why she was upset, and if she didn't tell him, that would mean she wanted him to kiss her.

She replied, "I don't want to tell you, let me go."

Lu Qiang shook his head and said, "Nope! I won't since you're not telling me, and that's good since I am desperate to kiss you at this moment. It has been few days since I tasted you. You might have missed it too."

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, "No! I don't."

Lu Qiang moved his lips closer to hers and said while touching his lips to hers, "Really? You don't want to taste me?"

When Jiang Yuyan felt the touch of his lips on hers and his hot breath on her face, she gulped down her saliva and breathed heavily. She wanted to touch his lips too. She couldn't say no and waited for him to kiss her.

Lu Qiang knew about her condition and he too wanted to kiss her as it was very difficult for him to be close to her and not to do anything while controlling his desires. He was already controlling himself for the past few days and now it was getting difficult with each passing moment. For a second, Lu Qiang thought to forget his resolution and kiss her with all his might and ravish her completely but he stopped. He moved his face back from hers and looked at her face.

Jiang Yuyan was anticipating to get kissed by him and she wanted it too but when Lu Qiang moved his face away, she felt disappointed and tried hard not to show it on her face.

Lu Qiang looked at her with his intense gaze and said in a hoarse voice, “Do you know, how difficult it is to control myself when I am this close to you and feel like ravishing you completely.”

Jiang Yuyan heard him and her expression changed to a soft one. She could understand how hard it must be for a man to control his desires.

Lu Qiang moved away from her and freed her. He was sitting on the edge of the bed to calm himself down and Jiang Yuyan was looking at his back while lying in a bed. She couldn't decide what she had to do at that moment.

Jiang Yuyan sat on the bed too and was about to say something but Lu Qiang stood up and said while still facing his back to her, “That message was nothing. It was just a prank played by Lu Feng, intentionally and you are the most important thing in my life.” He said it and walked towards the door and went out of the room without giving Jiang Yuyan chance to speak a single word.

When Jiang Yuyan heard him, she felt guilty for being upset with Lu Qiang without any reason. She wanted to say something but Lu Qiang had already left the room.

147 In Search Of Lu Qiang..

When Lu Qiang left, Jiang Yuyan sat in a bed for long time while thinking about what had just happened. She got out of the bed and went to the gallery to get fresh air and to think about it clearly. She thought, what Lu Qiang was expecting from her was not wrong and it was not something that she didn't want to. She realized, It was always Lu Qiang who initiated the romance between them and she just followed him.

Lu Qiang confessed to her but she was still making him wait for her turn. She never thought about to confess it before she was able to tell him about her past and to tell him what was her problem. She was afraid to make his life difficult because of her past. She was not sure whether she would be able to get out of it ever and live a normal life with Lu Qiang, so she was just buying a time for herself to prepare for it.

Jiang Yuyan finally couldn't take it as she thought, it was her fault and she hurt him. She immediately wanted to go to Lu Qiang and talk to him. She didn't know what she will say to him but she just wanted to go to him, see him and talk to him at least something and to make sure, he was not upset with her.

Jiang Yuyan stepped towards door of her room and went out of the room to meet Lu Qiang. She went to his room, stood in front of his room's door for a while then took a deep breath and knocked on it. She waited for sometime but there was no reply so she directly opened the door with her heart ready to jump out of her chest as she was anxious to face Lu Qiang. Also, it was the first time, she was stepping inside his room that made her even more anxious.

As she entered the room, she saw, no one was there inside. She checked the room properly. She thought, Lu Qiang might be in bathroom so she waited for a while. When there was no movement inside, she knocked on the bathroom door. As there was no response again she checked the bathroom too.

Lu Qiang was not there and she wanted to talk to him desperately. She walked fast out from his room and went downstairs. She checked in living room but he was not there.

Elder Lu saw her who was coming out of his room and asked, “Are you searching for something?”

Jiang Yuyan startled with sudden question and replied while catching her breath, “N..No grandpa. I was just getting bored so came down stairs.”

Elder Lu knew she was hiding something but he didn't showed it on his face. He just said, “I see! If you are getting bored then go to Lu Lijun's room. He is a nice kid to be with. You can draw or play video games with him if you like it.”

Elder Lu knew, Jiang Yuyan must be searching for Lu Qiang as she was not close to anyone in the mansion till now. As Lu Qiang was not there so he used this opportunity to get her be friendly with Lu Lijun. He was sure that Lu Lijun won't ask her to get out of his room, instead he will ask her what she wants and will help her or might let her be with him to accompany her.

Jiang Yuyan wanted to reject Elder Lu's offer, but she thought, Lu Qiang might be in Lu Lijun's room, so she nodded and said, “Okay Grandpa” and left to go to upstairs, on first floor to Lu Lijun's room.

When she reached on first floor, she knocked on Lu Lijun's room door. Immediately she heard a voice, “Come in”.

Jiang Yuyan opened the door and stepped inside. She saw, Lu Lijun was playing video game on his gaming laptop while sitting in a chair in front of his study table. He was too immersed in it, to not look at her even for once.

Jiang Yuyan was there to check if Lu Qiang was in that room or not. As she confirmed, he was not there, she decided to leave.

Jiang Yuyan was about to turn and leave Lu Lijun's room, he talked, “Wait for two minutes. I am about to finish this game.”

Jiang Yuyan stopped and didn't move, as it was the first time he talked to her on his own. Moreover, he asked her to stay

instead of asking her to leave his room.

Soon Lu Lijun finished his game and looked at her. He looked in her eyes and said, “Elder brother is not here. He got call from office and he had to go as it was something important and his presence was necessary to conduct few things properly and get them back to their desired places.”

Jiang Yuyan was surprised to hear it. She was stunned, with how Lu Lijun came to know that she was looking for his brother and the other thing was, the way he was talking. It sounded more like an adult person not like a kid. The words and tone he used sounded like a professional. He didn't seem like a kid while talking to her. The way he behaved in front of others and his brother was totally different from what he looked like at that moment.

Jiang Yuyan didn't know what to say as how could she say that, she was there to search for his brother and couldn't even deny the fact as he had already guessed it correctly. One thing she realized, Lu Lijun was not an ordinary kid. He was something different.

Jiang Yuyan just replied with simple, “Okay!” and waited for a while as she didn't know what to do or say further.

Lu Lijun was still looking at her and said, “If you are bored, you can play video game with me, of course only if you don't mind.”

Jiang Yuyan was again shocked a little. This kid who always gave her cold glares was now asking her to join to play video game with him. He looked mysterious to her as she couldn't predict or guess what could be in his mind.

Jiang Yuyan enjoyed playing games with her brother so she decided to play with Lu Lijun too. She thought to being with Lu Lijun, as it will help to break ice between them and she can wait patiently for Lu Qiang to come back.

Jiang Yuyan again replied with “Okay” and sat beside him in a couch.

148 We Can Be Good Friends!!

Lu Lijun have gaming console in his room so he decided to use it to play game on it with Jiang Yuyan. He asked her, “Which game would you like to play?”

Jiang Yuyan immediately replied, “I like car racing games.”

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “Okay! It has the latest one now with best graphics and best play score. Let’s play it.” and handed over one wireless controller to her.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and accepted it. As both were ready to play, Lu Lijun turned on the game. Lu Lijun asked, “Which car do you want to pick up?”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Any model with color red.”

Lu Lijun was going through car’s and select one for her with color red and said, “I will go with black one.”

Jiang Yuyan asked while looking at him, “You too like only black and white colors like your elder brother?”

Jiang Yuyan observed Lu Lijun’s room when she entered into his room and his room looked similar to Lu Qiang’s room that had only white and silver grey color in contrast. She started to notice that most of his habits and behavior were like Lu Qiang and she was surprised to see, how much Lu Lijun was influenced by his elder brother.

Lu Lijun replied while still going through the game setting, “Other colors suits only to girls.”

Jiang Yuyan had taken aback by his words. She wanted to say something but stopped herself as she didn’t want to ruin that pleasant atmosphere.

Lu Lijun had done with everything and game was ready to start. He looked at her and asked, “Ready?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and both started to play. Both were trying their best but Jiang Yuyan realized, Lu Lijun was better than her in playing this game. Lu Lijun won first game and said with ear to ear smile on his face, “I won!”

Jiang Yuyan was surprised to see him smiling. He looked too cute and adorable kid when he was smiling and he too had those cute canine like his brother which were the most attractive part of that smile. She realized, Lu Lijun looked somewhat similar to Lu Qiang from his childhood days. She suddenly remember Lu Qiang and her face had sad expressions.

Lu Lijun noticed her sad expressions and said, “It’s okay! You can win next game.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled to hear it as she was not sad because of losing a game, but she nodded to what he said and replied, “I won’t go easy this time.”

Lu Lijun replied, “Let’s see! You are not bad but you can’t win with me. Elder brother and I are best with games.”

Jiang Yuyan curiously asked, “Between both of you, who wins most of the time?”

Lu Lijun replied while getting ready for second game, “Well, it’s like a tie all the time but sometimes we let win other intentionally. We do but never pretend to do so.”

Jiang Yuyan was looking at Lu Lijun. He looked happy and excited, opposite from his cold self which he saw most of the time. He was looking like a kid of his age instead of how she saw him moments before when she came to his room. He was not hiding this side from her now and she thought it’s all because of what they were doing was his favorite thing to do.

Both started the new game. While playing, Jiang Yuyan was picking a glances at him to see this excited Lu Lijun. He looked so adorable while smiling and enjoying but when he was playing a game he had those serious expressions like Lu Qiang. This time Jiang Yuyan won the game.

Lu Lijun looked at her and said, “See, didn’t I say you will win next time.”

Jiang Yuyan laughed and said, “Yeah you were right. By the way, thanks for letting me win.”

Lu Lijun smiled and said, “I didn’t do anything. You played very well and beat me.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Haha! I believe you.”

Lu Lijun didn’t say anything but smiled and asked, “Do you want to play more? I think elder brother will take time to come back.”

Jiang Yuyan was speechless again. She felt awkward as she was a thief and he caught her. She averted her sight and said, “I don’t want to play anymore. I am tired.”

Lu Lijun noticed her awkward behavior and said, “You don’t have to be awkward around me. I know elder brother and you like each other and I am okay with it.”

Jiang Yuyan was shocked again to hear it and thought, ‘these two brothers never falls to shock her and leave her speechless all the time. Did Lu Lijun took after his brother that much? Not only by looks, he was similar to him in all way possible.’

Jiang Yuyan asked while looking at him, “So you know it already?”

Lu Lijun replied while tidying the gaming things, “He is my brother. I know him as much as he knows me.”

Jiang Yuyan was looking at him curiously that how this little guy was so matured. She asked, “So you don’t have any problem?”

Lu Lijun looked at her and said, “Well, three things. First, you are a nice person. Second, you are a not annoying like other girls and third, my brother first time liked someone, so he can’t be wrong with his judgement.”

Jiang Yuyan heard him and was even more surprised. His way of talking, that ‘Three Things’ style and she was like ‘What the hell!’ She was too shocked that she was about to say these words from her mouth but swallowed them back. She couldn’t help but think same thing again and again, “How can he be so similar to Lu Qiang?”

She was staring at Lu Lijun while lost in her own thoughts. Lu Lijun looked at her and asked, “Are you okay?”

Jiang Yuyan came out of her daze and said, “I almost felt like, I was talking to Lu Qiang.”

Lu Lijun laughed and said, “Haha! You must be missing elder brother a lot.”

Jiang Yuyan again felt surprised to see him teasing her. She looked him in his eyes and asked, “Are you teasing me now?”

Lu Lijun again laughed and said, “Yes! My bad.” and laughed again.

Jiang Yuyan was looking at his adorable laughing face and she smiled to see him like that. She thought about something and said, “I think, we can be good friends.”

Lu Lijun nodded and said, “Yup! I think so too.”

149 I Won't Let Her Go!!

Jiang Yuyan smiled and asked, "So, deal?"

Lu Lijun too smiled and replied, "Yup! Deal for life time."

Jiang Yuyan felt glad to hear it. She never ever thought, Li Lijun will ever accept her and he will even talk to her with smile on his face. What just happened, seems like a dream to her. Both were lying lazily leaning back in a couch as they were tired because of playing video game for long time.

Lu Lijun suddenly dialed a number on the intercom in his room which was just beside a couch on small wooden stand. While holding a receiver near to his ear, Lu Lijun asked, "I am ordering a juice for us with some snacks from a kitchen, which one would you like to have?"

Jiang Yuyan who was still leaning back in a couch lazily, with her eyes closed, replied, "Anything, that you like." Jiang Yuyan was too tired to think about it, moreover, at that moment she was just thinking about Lu Qiang.

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "Okay!" He asked servant to bring juice and snacks to his room for two people and then looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, "It will come in minutes till then let's watch something on television." Jiang Yuyan nodded and Lu Lijun turned on the television.

Lu Lijun didn't asked her what she wanted to see and played a cartoon on it. Jiang Yuyan saw it and said, "Hey! I like this one. Cute girl and a sweet bear."

Lu Lijun smirked and said, "This cartoon reminds me of, how much a girl can be annoying. Poor bear!"

Jiang Yuyan asked curiously, "So you don't like girls because you think they are annoying."

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "It's not only my thinking, they really are annoying."

Jiang Yuyan laughed a little to hear it and said, “If you will think like this, you won’t get any girlfriend in future.”

Lu Lijun replied, “I don’t need girlfriend. I will directly marry to someone and will be with her for whole life just like my parents and grandparents.”

Jiang Yuyan felt little surprised and said, “You are still young and you are thinking like this already. You probably don’t even understand how this marriage things work. You should just enjoy your life first.”

Lu Lijun replied, “Well, I know I am a kid but I am still able to decide what I want in present and future and what I don’t want.”

Jiang Yuyan was immersed in her thought while thinking, how 11 year old kid can talk like this so confidently. She decided to talk to Lu Qiang about Lu Lijun’s behavior. He seems so mature sometimes and sometimes he behaved like a kid of his age. What they were talking at that moment, were not the things to be discuss with eleven year old kid, but Jiang Yuyan wanted to see what more and how far he could think about it.

Jiang Yuyan asked curiously again, “What if that girl don’t want to be with you for her whole life time.”

Lu Lijun replied without any expression on his face, “She has to be with me. I won’t let her go. Once she is mine then she is just mine. Moreover, I know she will never leave me.”

Jiang Yuyan couldn’t help but stare at him for while. He looked very serious about what he said. How could he say such things at such young age and that too confidently. She was now sure that she had to discuss about Lu Lijun with Lu Qiang.

Jiang Yuyan asked with a questioning gaze, “How do you know, she will never leave you?”

“Can you ever think about to leave elder brother?” Lu Lijun asked straight forwardly.

Jiang Yuyan immediately replied, “Nope!”

“Then we brothers are same. Our women won’t think about to leave us.” He replied with straight face and confidence in his voice.

Jiang Yuyan dropped her jaw almost in a shock. She saw him talking like this that even adults won’t talk. She couldn’t help but ask him, “Lu Lijun, are you really 11 year old. I mean from where this confidence is coming from and from where you learned all these things like ‘My woman’ and all?”

Lu Lijun didn’t react to her surprised behavior. He was calm and had same expressions on his face and replied, “If not my woman, so what should I call her? Moreover, we Lus have been born with confidence. Also, do you want me to show you my birth certificate so that you can be sure about my age?”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head as not knowing what to argue with him. Just then servant arrived and brought snacks and juice for them. Both talked for sometime and shared so many things about their schools, friends and other stuff. That day, they even had a lunch in Lu Lijun’s room. Both were tired and Jiang Yuyan fell asleep in a couch while watching a television.

Lu Lijun looked at her. He sighed and murmured to himself, ‘How can someone fell asleep like this, can’t even get to their own room and bed.’ Lu Lijun turned of the television to not disturb Jiang Yuyan’s sleep. He picked up a quilt from his bed and covered Jiang Yuyan with it. He turned off all the lights, stepped out of the room to go to downstairs and straight went to the garden to his favorite place.

It was almost evening when Jiang Yuyan woke up. She realized, she was sleeping in Lu Lijun’s room. She looked around and Lu Lijun was not there. She checked the time on wall clock and got up from a couch immediately as thinking, ‘It’s evening and Lu Qiang must be home now’

Jiang Yuyan stepped out of the room while thinking where Lu Qiang might be, in his room or downstairs, just then she heard a voice. “Elder brother is not home yet so don’t search for him, but I am sure, he would be back before dinner.”

Jiang Yuyan turned to look at staircase and asked, “Is he not back yet?”

Jiang Yuyan was so desperate to meet Lu Qiang that she couldn't realize what she was talking. It was like admitting to what Lu Lijun said.

Lu Lijun replied, "Whenever he has any emergency situation in office, he never comes back early but he makes sure to join us for dinner, so rest assured he will be here in an hour or two."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and turned to upstairs on the second floor in her room. She didn't know what to do as she was missing Lu Qiang badly. She freshened up and went to her room's gallery.

Just before, half hour of dinner time, a black Maybach entered into Lu mansion's gate. That was Lu Qiang who came back from his work. Jiang Yuyan was still there in gallery and when she saw that black car, she understood, that was Lu Qiang. She gave out a sigh of relief and was smiling ear to ear.

Jiang Yuyan immediately stepped out of her room and ran to go downstairs. As she stepped down the stairs, she realized, it's not good to act like this in front of everyone, so she controlled herself. She was breathing quite heavily as she ran to come downstairs. Other family members were present in living room too.

150 U Missed Me That Much?

Once Lu Qiang excused himself and went upstairs to his room, Jiang Yuyan sat beside Elder Lu. everyone was talking about something but Jiang Yuyan was just nodding to what these people were saying, as her mind was busy in thinking about Lu Qiang. She wanted to talk to him as soon as possible.

Just in while, it was dinner time. Lu Qiang came downstairs after getting freshen up and all went to dining room. As usual everyone sat on their chairs with Lu Lijun on left side of of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan on his right side. Jiang Yuyan was peaking a glances at Lu Qiang. She was afraid that he might be upset with her but it was Lu Qiang's normal behavior in home as not being too talkative.

Whenever Lu Qiang's sight met with Jiang Yuyan, he gave her light smile and was behaving as usual but still Jiang Yuyan was worried about him being upset with her. Lu Qiang was paying attention to Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan's dish too.

This time when Lu Qiang served food in Jiang Yuyan's dish, other family members were smiling and were looking at each other while Lu Feng and Lu Lijun were eating with neutral expressions on their faces as they were unaware about everything going on there. Everyone could guess, what was the meaning of Lu Qiang's action as he never ever paid this much attention to anyone else but his younger brother Lu Lijun.

Lu Qiang noticed, Jiang Yuyan was not eating properly. She was too slow and was eating like something had stuck in her throat. Lu Qiang looked at her and said in an ordering way with firm voice and no expression on face, "Eat properly." Then, he served some vegetables in her dish and filled her bowl with a soup again without giving her a chance to say 'No'.

Other started look at their partners in gossiping and were smiling. Lu Qiang suddenly noticed, everyone was smiling when he passed his sight across the table, once he finished serving Jiang Yuyan.

Lu Qiang asked while again passing his sight to across everyone in the room, “What?”

Upon hearing this, expressions on their faces changed from smiling to silent one. Elder Lu replied, “What? What? We were just wondering, when that day will come, when my grandson will serve food in our dishes too and order us to eat properly like we are kids.” All nodded to what elder Lu said apart from Lu Feng and Lu Lijun who were neither surprised with Lu Qiang’s action nor they were smiling like others did.

Lu Qiang replied with firm voice, “Don’t be delusional. Just concentrate on your food, all of you.”

Elder Lu smiled teasingly and said, “Delusional? I think, I am now days. That means I am too old and near to my last moments, so you should give me grandchildren before those last moments arrives towards me.”

Lu Qiang sighed and said, “Don’t worry grandpa, I will make sure, you will not meet your final moments until you won’t see your grandchildren.”

Nobody said anything further as Jiang Yuyan was sitting there and she might feel awkward. Dinner was over and after chatting for sometime, all went to their rooms as it was late.

Jiang Yuyan too wished everyone good night and went to her room and Lu Qiang just saw her retreating back. As Lu Qiang was ready to go with Lu Lijun, Lu Lijun stopped him and said, “Elder brother, you must be tired today as you were working whole day, so don’t accompany me to sleep. I will be with brother Lu Feng. We both planned to play game tonight as tomorrow is sunday.”

Lu Qiang replied, “That’s okay, but sleep early.”

Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang and nodded saying, “Rest assured.”

Lu Qiang nodded lightly as saying as 'Okay' and wished both his brothers good night and went upstairs to second floor. He straight went to Jiang Yuyan's room instead of his room. Lu Qiang knocked on the door and it opened in just in a second. Jiang Yuyan opened the door and when she saw Lu Qiang, she immediately hugged him tightly.

Lu Qiang was surprised on her action but felt glad too. He hugged her back and asked while holding her gently in his embrace, "Did you miss me that much?"

Jiang Yuyan nodded but didn't let go of him. She held him like he was going to leave her again. Lu Qiang patted her back lightly and said, "Let's go inside."

Jiang Yuyan finally let go of him and both went inside the room. Her eyes looked moist as she was about to cry. Lu Qiang held her face in his palm and looked at her in her eyes. He asked, "Why are you crying? I am here now."

Jiang Yuyan replied, "Because, you left and didn't even informed me. You broke your promise. Whole day I was waiting for you like crazy."

Lu Qiang looked at her with puzzled expressions and said. "Didn't inform you? What does that mean?"

Jiang Yuyan replied, "Yes, you didn't inform me that you were going to office and won't be coming back soon."

Lu Qiang pinched the space between his eyebrows and said, "Well, where is your mobile?"

Jiang Yuyan replied coldly, "I don't know."

Lu Qiang let go of her and searched for her mobile which was on bedside table but was on silent mode. Lu Qiang looked at her and asked, "When was the last time you touched your mobile?"

Jiang Yuyan replied casually while not giving much thought about it, "Last night when brother Yang and my parents called."

Lu Qiang sighed and said, "We carry these mobiles with us not to keep it as show pieces. You should have checked it at least

once.” Lu Qiang opened the messages in her mobile and held the cellphone in front of her face and said, “See!”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “I know but you are always here so I don’t need it. I thought you were upset with me and left, so why would you message me and also, I was panicked to think about anything rationally”

151 Fierce Jiang Yuyan!!

Lu Qiang realized what might have happened and tried to clear her misunderstanding, “When I was downstairs with my father, I got call from office and I had to hurry. I called you before I left the home but you didn’t receive, so I left you a message as it would have taken lot of time to come to second floor again. Before I could sit in a car, I saw you in the gallery, lost in your own thoughts. I called you again but you didn’t received and I had to leave just like that.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t know what to say. She just cursed herself for not checking her cellphone for even once in a whole day. She checked the messages in her cellphone and there were few messages sent by Lu Qiang. Messages saying, he was leaving for office to control emergency situation, asked her if she had lunch, what she was doing at the particular moment, he would return late and not to wait for him, why she was not replying to him. Also, she saw all those missed calls from Lu Qiang too.

Jiang Yuyan felt apologetic and said in a sad voice , “I am sorry.” She was feeling guilty.

Lu Qiang went closer to her, hugged her and said, “You don’t need to. Lets go to sleep now. It’s late.”

Jiang Yuyan lifted her face to look at him and asked while still being in his embrace, “You must be tired.”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Umm, Just little bit.” He then smiled mischievously and said while looking into her eyes, “Why? Are you worried, if we suddenly start do something and I won’t be able to do it because I am tired.”

Jiang Yuyan blushed and hit him on his chest lightly. Lu Qiang moved his face closer to hers and whispered in her ear, “Rest assured, these things can’t affect my performance.”

Jiang Yuyan felt shy to hear those words and she tried to get away from him but Lu Qiang held her tightly and said while

looking into her eyes, “No need to run away from me. I am not going to do anything, until you want it.” He said it and then let her go.

Jiang Yuyan didn't thought, he will let her go that easily based on her previous experiences, when he never missed any opportunity to get closer to her and did whatever he wanted. She was now sure that he had taken her words too seriously which she said just normally.

Lu Qiang stepped towards bed and Jiang Yuyan was staring at him. Lu Qiang climbed into the bed and was ready to lie down. He looked at Jiang Yuyan whose sight was following his actions. He patted the empty space beside him in bed with his hands and signaled Jiang Yuyan to join him.

Jiang Yuyan obeyed and stepped towards bed. She too climbed the bed and sat beside Lu Qiang being ready to sleep next to him. Lu Qiang pulled over a quilt and asked her to lie down.

Lu Qiang turned his face to look at her and said, “Good night.” and then, turned his face back and closed his eyes. Jiang Yuyan was still looking at him. Lu Qiang closed his eyes but he could still feel her sight on him. “Stop staring at me and sleep.” he said with his eyes closed and not bothering to look at her.

Jiang Yuyan didn't listen and still was staring at him. Finally Lu Qiang opened his eyes and looked at her. “What happened?”

Jiang Yuyan answered, “Are you upset with me?”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Why should I be?”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Because I didn't kiss you.”

Lu Qiang sighed and said, “Silly! I can't be upset with you ever. Don't think too much just sleep.” He turned his head back and closed his eyes again.

Jiang Yuyan took a deep breath, turned to her left side and moved on to Lu Qiang. Her half upper body was on his. The moment Lu Qiang felt her on his chest, he opened his eyes and saw, she was staring at his face as waiting for him to open his eyes.

The moment Lu Qiang opened his eyes, Jiang Yuyan said while staring into them, "But I want to kiss you." Her sight was moving from his eyes to his lips continuously as waiting to devour them completely.

Lu Qiang was shocked to see her like this. She looked different from her usual shy self. She looked bold and confident. Lu Qiang replied while staring back into her demanding eyes, "Who is stopping you."

Jiang Yuyan didn't wait for a moment and straight started to suck and nibble Lu Qiang's lips. Lu Qiang stayed still and didn't react. He let her do the way she wanted it. He just moved his both hands and circled them around her delicate and thin back.

Jiang Yuyan was sucking and nibbling Lu Qiang's both lips one after another while putting her weight on his body. She was moving her one hand through his hair and other one was caressing his cheek. She even bit his lower lips while pulling it out with her teeth. It made Lu Qiang tighten his grip around her back.

Lu Qiang felt little pain but it was pleasures pain and wanted it even more. Her breath was heavy and her body temperature was quite up. As Lu Qiang was not responding her back, she stopped and looked at him to stare into his eyes with displeased look. She was panting and looked greedy to kiss him more and more.

Lu Qiang smiled as he knew why she was looking at him. He held her tightly by her waist and completely pulled her on top of him and stared in her eyes intensely.

Jiang Yuyan noticed the change in his gaze which was demanding for more just as hers, so she kissed him again. This time Lu Qiang responded to her kiss but he was following her lead instead of dominating her. He was more like a submissive and let her be a dominant. He was not rushing for anything even though he had otherwise in his mind.

After assaulting Lu Qiang's lips for a while, Jiang Yuyan slid her tongue in Lu Qiang's mouth and Lu Qiang welcomed her gladly. She found his tongue and tasted it's sweetness which

made her do it fiercely. She was trying her best, still she felt that she was not doing it properly. She was breathless after sometime so retreated her lips and threads of saliva were visible which broke when she moved her face further back.

Both were looking into each others eyes while panting heavily. Lu Qiang wiped her lips with his thumb and caressed her cheek with his palm. His other hand was moving up and down on her curvy back while clutching her delicate skin in his palm, in between.

152 Do You Want Me To Go Crazy?

Lu Qiang caressed Jiang Yuyan's cheek and said, "You did well" and he moved his hand to the back of her neck, towards the lower side of her head; pulling her face closer to kiss her again. She was still on top of him. Lu Qiang slid his tongue into her mouth without waiting for a second. He was not gentle as he was making up for all those days, when he controlled himself from being closer to her.

While kissing passionately, Lu Qiang held her waist tightly, turned and flipped her into the bed to be on top of her. He didn't stop kissing her for a single moment.

Jiang Yuyan didn't let go of him. When Lu Qiang flipped her in bed she held him tightly and was kissing him with same passion. Their tongues were dancing together in sync until both were struggling to breathe and their tongues became numb; but they didn't want to stop for a moment.

Lu Qiang's left hand, which was holding her at her waist, moved upward and he slid it into her top. From the side of her curvy waist, his hands moved towards her chest. The moment he touched the bottom of her inner wear on her chest, Jiang Yuyan held his hand and stopped it.

Lu Qiang stopped kissing and parted his lips away from hers to look at her. Both were panting heavily. He saw, Jiang Yuyan had closed her eyes and looked like she was in pain. Lu Qiang was about to retreat his hand but she kept holding it. She opened her eyes and didn't let go of his hand as saying, do it.

Lu Qiang didn't realize what he was doing because they were both immersed in their passionate love making moments. He forgot, he should not touch her in there and subconsciously slipped his hand in her top. When Jiang Yuyan held his hand to

stop him, he realized what he was doing and decided to retreat his hand.

The moment Jiang Yuyan asked him to continue, he wanted it but shook his head and said, "It's okay!" He gave her a peck on lips and retreated his hand from inside of her top.

Jiang Yuyan had an apologetic expression on her face. Lu Qiang smiled to look at her and said, "Don't be sorry. We can do other things and trust me those are more interesting" and smiled mischievously.

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan felt little scared but gave out a sigh of relief as Lu Qiang was not displeased. Lu Qiang didn't give her a chance to think more and kissed her again. He moved to her neck and started to suck her skin with his lips and teeth, again being careful to not leave any marks on it, but it was not possible with the way he was doing it, too aggressively.

Jiang Yuyan was moaning softly but the way Lu Qiang was getting aggressive that made her moan loudly. She tried to stop it by pressing her lips tightly together, as it was not working, she covered her mouth with her palm to suppress her voice.

Lu Qiang looked at her and said in his hoarse voice, "Let me hear you" Jiang Yuan shook her head while still covering her lips with her palm. Upon seeing this, Lu Qiang said, "Only my lips have the right to cover yours."

Lu Qiang moved her hand and kissed her. He parted away after a while and said again, "Whenever you want to cover your mouth to stop yourself from moaning, tell me. See, I can do it better."

Jiang Yuyan didn't know what to say. Her head was already dizzy with so many long and breathless kisses. With her moist eyes she was just looking at him to understand what did he mean.

Lu Qiang smiled to look at her puzzled face and asked, "Tired?"

Jiang Yuyan just nodded, feeling too short for breath to say anything.

“I will not trouble you with kissing now, you need a break.” He had a mischievous expression on his face with one corner of his lips curved upward. He moved down along to her body, not touching her chest and stopping at her stomach. Jiang Yuyan couldn’t help but look at him and think about; what he was up to.

Lu Qiang moved her top slightly upward, which was already messed up. When he saw her abdomen, he straight kissed her near her belly button, giving Jiang Yuyan goose bumps all over her body. Lu Qiang started to trace kisses and to suck and bite the skin on her abdomen towards the sides of her curvy waist. Both of his hands were on either side of her waist, caressing it slowly.

Jiang Yuyan felt ticklish in her lower abdomen because of Lu Qiang’s sudden move. The way he was playing with her abdomen, made her moan even more and she couldn’t help but arch her back. She liked it and wanted him to keep doing it.

After leaving love bites on her delicate skin, Lu Qiang’s sight moved to the top of her pants. He was hesitant on whether to move further or not. He looked at Jiang Yuyan, who looked confused with what’s going to happen as it was her first time to going through such intimate act.

Lu Qiang closed his eyes and exhaled to calm down himself. He moved back up, looked in her eyes and asked, “Did you like it?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded with light smile on her face. She was feeling shy and was blushing. Lu Qiang gave her a peck on the lips and said, “This is enough for now. Let’s sleep.”

As Lu Qiang was about to move away from her, she stopped him by holding his arm. Lu Qiang looked at his arm where she held him and then looked at her face. He didn’t ask her what happen. Her eyes were enough to tell him what she wanted.

Lu Qiang moved back to her and said, “Do you want me to go crazy? It is already too difficult for me to control myself.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Who is asking you to control?”

Lu Qiang arched his eyebrow in question, “Huh?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded, “Yes!”

With her ‘Yes’ Lu Qiang’s eyes darkened and he said, “Now don’t blame me, you asked for it.” He said as he kissed her ferociously.

153 I Want To Help You...

Lu Qiang pinned both of her hands above her head with his hands. He put all his body weight on hers, not allowing her to move a bit. He was kissing her with all his might that she couldn't catch up to his pace and soon felt short for breath. She was struggling. Lu Qiang let go of her lips for a moment and said while looking into her eyes with his hoarse voice, "Breathe!"

Jiang Yuyan was already feeling dizzy. She tried to breathe as much as she could. Lu Qiang parted her legs away by using one of his legs to separate them. He was now in between her legs. Once her breathing was normal, he captured her lips again with his but this time there was a change in his behavior. He was not gentle at all. He was using his teeth more, his body temperature was on higher side and there was a change in his lower body part, which he was rubbing against her private part that made Jiang Yuyan feel very different. But, she couldn't tell what that feeling was.

Lu Qiang let go of her hands, moved his right hand to the back of her neck and lifted it little up to kiss on her neck. Jiang Yuyan also moved her head up to let him do it easily and comfortably. What Lu Qiang was doing towards the south with his aroused lower body part, was way too arousing for both of them. The only thing stopping them from doing the actual deed was their clothing.

Lu Qiang's hands moved to her top's neckline and he tore it apart till half. That top had three buttons. He didn't bother to open them just tore them apart with the force used by his both hands. Her chest was almost open in front of him with her inner wear covering her bosom. Lu Qiang didn't hesitate this time and started to kiss her just below her collar bones while sucking and pulling her delicate skin in his teeth, leaving marks on it.

Jiang Yuyan forgot what was happening and what Lu Qiang was doing as she was aroused by his manhood touching and

stroking her down there which made her arch her back and curl her toes. She was just moving her fingers through his hair on back side of his head.

Lu Qiang pulled her top down from her shoulder with the thin belts of her inner wear. Her bosoms were completely exposed in front of him and he couldn't hold back his temptation to touch them.

The moment he touched them with his hand and tried to take them in his mouth, Jiang Yuyan suddenly became stiff and she pulled back her hands which were moving through Lu Qiang's hair. Again the same thing happened. Lu Qiang realized it and stopped. He looked at her, she looked like holding her breath with her eyes shut tightly.

Lu Qiang straightened her top and covered her chest again. Jiang Yuyan opened her eyes only to realize, Lu Qiang had backed down. She looked at him and said, "I am fine. You can...."

"It's okay!" before she could say anything further, Lu Qiang stopped her. Then, he buried his face in the crook of her nape and said, "I am feeling like I am going to die now, just too difficult to bear it."

Jiang Yuyan felt sad to hear it. She hugged him tightly as he was lying on her body with his face buried in crook of her nape. Tears rolled down from her eyes and and she said, "I am sorry Lu Qiang."

Lu Qiang was still lying like this and replied, "No. I am sorry that I couldn't control myself." He lifted his head, looked at her and said, "I have to go now or I don't know what I will do to you. I am afraid I won't be able to control myself anymore."

Jiang Yuyan caressed his face with her palm and said while looking into his eyes with love for him, "Why are you even trying to control yourself then?"

Lu Qiang replied, "Because you are not ready yet."

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and was about to say that she was ready but Lu Qiang stopped her and said, "Don't say anything

that will make me do something that I don't want to right now. I will be back shortly.”

Lu Qiang was aware, she was not ready yet and she was trying to be just for his sake. He wanted her to be ready for this, mentally and physically both. Mentally she was ready but her body reacted otherwise, whenever he tried to touch her chest.

Lu Qiang didn't want her to suffer or remember anything from her past whenever they would be having their best moments together. Also, there was one more thing. He wanted to know her past first and he was waiting for her to share with him. He had all of these things in his mind all the time, but being close to her always made him lose his mind.

Lu Qiang got off from bed and stepped towards the bathroom immediately as he was afraid, he won't be able to stop if he continued to stay with her in same bed, in his current condition. Lu Qiang entered the bathroom and stood under the shower without even removing his clothes, with his both hands resting on the wall in front of him and his head lowered down with his eyes closed. Water was flowing down along his body.

Just in a minute, Lu Qiang heard a sound of bathroom door open and then closed. He turned his head to look in his right side. He saw, Jiang Yuyan was inside the bathroom and was standing near the door with her eyes lowered down and her hands clutching her pajama on either side.

Lu Qiang moved his hands through his hair and on his face to wipe the water and asked, “Why are you here?” He was already trying hard to control his desires but presence of Jiang Yuyan in front of him in there was going to make it worse for him.

Jiang Yuyan replied as she stepped towards him, “I want to help you.”

Upon hearing these words Lu Qiang pulled her inside shower, pinned her to the wall opposite to him and asked in a hoarse voice, “Do you even know the meaning of helping me in here; in this condition?”

154 You Are Mine now!!

Upon hearing these words Lu Qiang pulled her inside shower, pinned her to the wall opposite to him and asked in a hoarse voice, “Do you even know the meaning of helping me in here; in this condition?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and replied while looking back into his eyes, “I..I know.”

Lu Qiang didn't have anything to say. He was already fighting with his inner self and now Jiang Yuyan was in front of him, soaked from the shower water. Lu Qiang asked her, “Will you be able to take it?” Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “I will!”

Lu Qiang kissed her while pinning her to the wall of bathroom. He tore her top completely and threw it on the ground. He straight moved from her lips to her neck and started to suck and nibble it. He didn't remove her inner wears. While kissing, Lu Qiang Removed his clothes and was in just a single piece which was ready to get off too. Lu Qiang removed Jiang Yuyan's pajamas, leaving her in just her undergarments.

Lu Qiang retreated and looked at her. It was his first time seeing her almost naked. Her slim fair and curvy body was alluring to his eyes. He realized how beautiful she was and wanted to devour her at that very moment.

Jiang Yuyan looked at his Greek god like body. She had seen him in just a towel before, but right now he was soaked in water. The water droplets were flowing down along his strong and attractive body which made her gulp.

Lu Qiang again stepped towards her and whispered in her ear, “You really want to help me?” Jiang Yuyan just nodded slightly as her heart was pounding faster. He could feel her nodding since his face was almost touching hers. Lu Qiang kissed her shoulder and asked, “Do you know, how to?” Jiang Yuyan shook her head and Lu Qiang was expecting this reply from her already.

From her shoulder, he traced kisses along her neck till her lips. He kissed her for a moment, looked in her eyes, held her both hands and placed them on his manhood.

Jiang Yuyan was ready for this but still it startled her. She moved her sight from his face to look down towards her hands. She was holding it in her palm with her fingers surrounding it and Lu Qiang's palm covering hers.

Jiang Yuyan felt puzzled to feel it in her hands. She was amazed to see how smooth and firm it was. It felt almost like velvet but hard at the same time. She felt its warmth in her hand. She didn't find it gross at all, like what she was expecting before. Lu Qiang covered her palms and moved them up and down along his manhood slowly. She was following where he was leading her. He let go of her hands after few moments and let her do the rest.

Jiang Yuyan was feeling a bit shy but she didn't back down. She wanted to do something for him for the first time and also she didn't want him to suffer all the time just because of her weakness. She tried to do her best but she was worried to see expressions on Lu Qiang's face and asked, "Does it hurt?"

Lu Qiang didn't know how to react. He was at his peak but her innocent question made him smile. He shook his head and said, "Nope. Just keep doing it." He said it and kissed her to stop her from saying anything further. While kissing, he again covered her palms with his and signaled her to move faster as he was almost there. Jiang Yuyan obeyed to what he said. She felt a little pain in her wrist but it didn't made her stop.

Lu Qiang let go of her lips as he came and groaned loudly. The white fluid that came out spreaded all over on her hands and some of it was on her stomach too. Lu Qiang was panting heavily and he hugged her tightly after his release. Jiang Yuyan hugged him back, though she was hesitant since her hands were covered with his fluids. They stayed like that for a while until Lu Qiang calmed himself down.

After a while he let go of her and looked at her. She looked at him, curious to see how he was feeling. Lu Qiang smiled and said, "You did well" and gave her a peck on her lips. He

looked at her stomach and her hands which were covered in the outcome of his release. He held her hands in his and said while pulling her under the shower, "Let's clean you first."

Jiang Yuyan was still wearing her inner wears. Lu Qiang moved his hand to her back and said, "I am going to take it off." Jiang Yuyan nodded but she was worried Lu Qiang will see those scars, which were hiding below her tiny piece of clothing. As Lu Qiang removed it, he saw a few tiny scars on her chest but one looked little serious which was just below her left bosom, moving to her back.

Lu Qiang's expression changed. He lifted his hand to touch that scar but Jiang Yuyan held his hand before he could reach to it. "I told you before, those are ugly."

"For me, nothing is ugly that belongs to you."

"This is not the only one." Jiang Yuyan turned around to face her back towards him as she said it.

There was one more long scar, which was on the right side of her back and was moving along with the lower ribs of her thoracic cage, from her back towards front side of her chest.

As Lu Qiang touched it, Jiang Yuyan's body stiffened and she said, "These are the scars from my ugly past, which makes me this way, ugly."

Lu Qiang turned her around and said, "You are the most beautiful woman I have ever seen." he said it and kissed her again as he didn't know how to console her. For that, he should know her past first and he was desperately waiting to know it.

Lu Qiang poured shower gel on her and started to clean her. Yet there was one piece of clothing on Jiang Yuyan. He looked at it and Jiang Yuyan noticed what he was thinking. Lu Qiang raised his hands to remove it saying, "You don't have to feel shy about anything. However you are, you are mine now."

Lu Qiang removed that last piece of clothing and Jiang Yuyan didn't stop him. She knew, one day this was going to happen. They had a nice shower and afterwards Lu Qiang covered himself and her in towels.

155 Ready To Reveal Past...

Lu Qiang took Jiang Yuyan out of the bathroom while carrying in his arms while wrapped in a towel. He let her sit on the edge of the bed. He walked towards the wardrobe and pulled out two sets of pajamas for both of them. Both put on their clothes and climbed into the bed. Lu Qiang pulled quilt on them and lied down beside her.

Lu Qiang turned on his right side to look at her and said, “I was planning to make you feel, what I had just felt moments before in bathroom but I think this much is enough for you for tonight.”

Jiang Yuyan too turned on her left side to look at him. Upon hearing what he said, she nodded and replied, “I know what you mean but I am not ready for it yet.”

Lu Qiang moved closer to her, hugged her and said, “I know. I can understand.” He kissed on her forehead and both fell asleep while being in each other’s warm embrace.

Few hours passed by and it was a midnight. Lu Qiang heard a sound of crying and sobbing, in his sleep. He opened his eyes and looked at his right side just too see the back of Jiang Yuyan. She was sleeping while facing her back towards him with her legs folded up towards her stomach and her arms circling around her chest.

Lu Qiang realized she was crying. He immediately sat up in a bed and moved towards Jiang Yuyan. He placed his hand on her shoulder lightly and called her name, “Yuyan!”

Upon hearing her name, Jiang Yuyan turned to look at him. When she saw him, she sat up and hugged him while burying her face in his chest and started to cry and sob even more loudly.

Lu Qiang too hugged her back and let her cry as much as she wanted. Jiang Yuyan cried for long. Once she calmed down,

Lu Qiang held her face in his hands and asked while wiping her tears with his thumbs, “What happened?”

Jiang Yuyan was unable to answer it as she was still sobbing and when Lu Qiang asked her this question, she started to cry again. Lu Qiang suddenly noticed, her clothes were drenched in a sweat. He observed her carefully and asked in calmly, “Nightmare?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and hugged him again to bury her face in his chest. Lu Qiang patted her head and let her be like it for a while. “Let me get you water first,” he said it and got off from the bed to fetch water for her.

Lu Qiang passed her a glass of water and sat beside her on the edge of the bed. Jiang Yuyan drank water slowly as she felt choked in her throat because of continuous crying and kept quiet while looking at the floor. Lu Qiang took that glass and put it on bedside table.

Lu Qiang asked while looking at her, “Are you feeling better?” Jiang Yuyan nodded again. “Do you want to tell me about it? But only if you are comfortable.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said after clearing her throat, “I want to.”

Lu Qiang heard her and became tensed. He was ready and wanted to hear her past but when the moment came he felt worried to think, what it might be that shook his woman completely like this and changed her life.

Lu Qiang was just looking at her and saw she was in deep thoughts. “I think you should get fresh first, you will feel better, then we can talk about it. Jiang Yuyan said, “Okay!” and went to bathroom to freshen up.

Jiang Yuyan washed her face and calmed herself down. While looking into the mirror blankly, she thought about Lu Qiang. She was worried. She knew her past will hurt him, as he loved her too much and couldn't bear to see her hurt. Knowing the truth was important for him, but at the same time it was hurtful for him to know it too.

Jiang Yuyan remembered the incidence, her brother told her, when Lu Qiang made himself drunk and what was the reason for that. He was hurt just because he couldn't be with her when she was suffering. Knowing that truth, which made his woman suffer was something he might not handle or he might do something that he should not. But, this time she decided to tell him everything.

Jiang Yuyan came out of the bathroom. Lu Qiang stepped towards her and said while holding her hand, "Lets go to gallery. We can get some fresh air and you will feel better too." both went to gallery, Lu Qiang arranged two chairs for them to sit.

Jiang Yuyan didn't sit, instead she stood near the railing, feeling the cold breeze passing by touching her face and was looking at the sky. Lu Qiang too stood beside her while looking at the sky, where she was looking at but he didn't ask her anything.

After a while, Jiang Yuyan spoke finally to break the silence around them. "When I went to USA, I missed all of you very much. I never wanted to go there but I had too."

Lu Qiang was aware of it and said, "I know!"

Jiang Yuyan continued, still looking at the sky, "When I went there, I was alone. Different language, different people, different place. I had a problem to adjust in that new world."

Lu Qiang let her continue what she was about to say and didn't disturb her. He just kept humming whenever she paused for response from him. Both were talking while looking ahead towards sky facing in same direction. Lu Qiang once turned his to look at her and she looked lost in her own thoughts like she was remembering all those things again.

"To make me familiar with the people, my parents admitted me to one camp for kids, as it was vacation period over there. That camp had various activities for kids and I was enjoying a bit, but because of language barrier I couldn't mix up with those kids much."

"Hmmm!"

156 Trapped In A Room...

“I was foreigner for those kids too, like I was from different world as I looked different from them. There was one kid of my age, who used to bully me. I tried to avoid him so many times as I promised brother Yang that I will always control my anger but every time he used to come with different ideas to annoy me.”

“Hmmm!”

“One day, I couldn’t take it and beat him. He was hurt. Later I said sorry but he was angry and other kids too blamed me even after knowing the truth. I was disappointed and heartbroken. I went to home, told my brother and parents and they promised to solved it.”

“Hmmm!”

“Next day, It was my birthday. I was happy to receive gifts from my brother and my parents. Brother Yang promised to take me to amusement park after the camp and I was excited to go there. I forgot about the incidence from previous day and went to that camp with full of cheerful mood with lots of chocolates and cake for the kids in the camp.”

“Hmmm!”

“Everyone wished me and everything was normal. I cut the cake and gave them chocolates. The boy, whom I beat badly the other day, came to me with smile and wished me too. He apologized and asked me to be his friend. I agreed and we both were together for whole time and were enjoying. I thought, I got new friend over there. I was happy and trusted him.”

“Hmmm!”

“After a camp, he asked me to come with him as he wanted to show me newborn kittens which were around that place. Brother Yang was about to come to receive me to go to the amusement park so I said no to him but he insisted saying, ‘we

are friends so I should listen to him'. Also, I liked kittens a lot and couldn't hold back myself from going with him."

When Lu Qiang heard it, he was worried about what was going to come next as he had slight idea about what might have happened with her, based on her behavior during there intimate moments, but he wanted to hear it from her, what exactly had happened. He didn't react and just said while looking at the sky, "Hmmm!"

"He took me towards the area behind our class rooms. That was deserted place, so I asked him 'Why we are going to such scary place' so he said, 'Kittens are scared of us so they hide in places like this. We should check if they are okay.' I simply nodded and followed him. He took me to one room which looked like a storage room. I felt scared to see it but he said, 'Kittens are inside' and I followed him without a second thought and that was my biggest mistake"

With this, there was a change in Jiang Yuyan's voice. She paused for a moment, struggling to find words. Lu Qiang looked at her and he wanted to say stop and hug her. He knew, it was something that she didn't want to remember but just to tell him all of it, she was going through it again. Just then, Jiang Yuyan started to speak again.

"That Boy asked me to go inside first. I went inside and started to search for kittens and I heard the sound of closing the door. I turned to look at the door and I saw, that boy my friend was not there, instead three boys elder than us were in that room and they closed the door."

Lu Qiang clutched his hands on railing. He was ready to hear worst part of her past. He again replied with, "Hmmm!"

As door closed, that room looked even more scary as it was blocking the sunlight and room was half dark. Those three elder boys too looked scary to me. They were laughing to look at me. I asked why they closed the door and where is my friend? So they laughed and one of them with golden hair replied, 'There is no friend and we closed this door to punish you for hurting my little brother'. I couldn't understand what

they mean but I felt scared and asked them to open that door to let me go.”

“Hmmm!” As Jiang Yuyan was moving ahead with her past, Lu Qiang was feeling his chest was feeling heavy and he had trouble to breath. He couldn’t help but inhale then exhale deeply through his mouth.

“They laughed even more and stepped towards me. I still can hear their laughing voices whenever i remember it and close my eyes.” Suddenly tears rolled down from Jiang Yuyan’s eyes and her voice choked.

Lu Qiang turned towards her and hugged her. “If you can’t, then we can stop here.”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head while burying it in crook of his neck. She then looked at him and said, “If I can’t do it today then I won’t be able to do it ever and I want you to know this before we start new phase of our lives.”

Lu Qiang wiped tears in her eyes and nodded as giving her permission to continue. He too was feeling choked in his throat to see her crying. He could Imagine what was next. Lu Qiang passed her water again to make her feel relax. Jiang Yuyan drank it and moved back to her place.

She knew, she can’t say it while looking into Lu Qiang’s eyes because instead of talking, she might start to cry more. She was also afraid to see his reaction after knowing the truth. Lu Qiang too stood beside her again but this time he put his palm on the back of her palm which was resting on railing. He wanted to comfort her and tell her that he is with her.

“The boy with golden hair who was talking to me before, stepped towards me and I stepped back in a fear. I Couldn’t move further away, as just behind me it was end of that room. That boy signaled other two to catch me. I tried to run but there was no way out.”

“Hmmm!”

157 In Pain...

They caught me and I was helpless. Golden hair guy held me by my wrist tightly as smirking like I was a lowly thing. I was struggling to free my wrist but he held it tightly that made me wince in pain. That room was store room and there were few old tables from classroom. He asked those boys to bring two tables and arrange them in centre.”

“Hmmm!”

“I was crying and screaming to let me go as I was scared and didn’t know what those people were planning to do with me. I was just a kid to even think about it but could feel, I was in danger. He asked me to keep quiet but as I didn’t listen to him, he slapped me. I started to cry loudly and said, ‘My brother would be here soon let me go’ but that boy laughed even more and said, ‘No one comes to side so they wouldn’t know you are here’. I started to scream ‘Help me’ as much as I could say loudly but those guys were just laughing and it was making me demoralized. I was scared to death to see their devilish faces which haunts me till now.”

“Hmmm!” Lu Qiang exhaled and all this time he was caressing the back of her palm with his palm and fingers to make her feel better and to tell her, he was with her.

“That guy pushed me heard to the floor and said, ‘How dare you to beat my brother. Do you even know who we are?’ I didn’t know what he was talking about. I was crying as saying ‘let me go’. That boy hit me on my face and kicked me in my stomach. It was too painful that I couldn’t even make any sound from my throat. I felt like dying. I was lying on the floor, crying and holding my stomach with my knees folded up. That boy didn’t just stop with it. He kicked me again and again, where ever he could do it all possible ways till he feels satisfied. He looked like a monster. I closed my eyes and couldn’t help but cry and scream with all that pain.”

Upon hearing it, unknowingly tears rolled down from Lu Qiang's eyes. He couldn't imagine something too cruel could happen to her. At that moment, he just had one thought in his mind, just to kill those bastards. He turned his face slightly in other direction opposite from Jiang Yuyan as he didn't want her to see his tears. They were facing in same direction. Jiang Yuyan was lost in her own thoughts, but still he was worried she might see him and feel even more sad to see tears in his eyes. Jiang YuYan continued...

"He bent down towards the floor just to tear my clothes off. He held my top and tore it from a side with his both hands and I couldn't even stop him. I was half naked, helplessly lying on the floor. He asked other two boys who arranged table in the centre of the room to bring me on table. Those boys dragged me like garbage. I was in pain. I feel like bones of my chest were breaking. I was not even able to scream or ask for help from someone. I lost all the hopes that someone might come to help me or save me from these monsters."

"Hmmm!" Every word from Jiang Yuyan was like needle penetrating in Lu Qiang's heart. He kept listening what she was saying with rock on his chest.

"I let them do what they were trying to do as I didn't had a bit of energy to resist or to say a single word to let me go. After dragging me towards tables, they lift me by holding my hands and legs and threw me on those tables. With that, I could feel, my chest was hurting even more and I felt like I was going to die. That golden hair boy was smiling to see me in pain. As he stepped towards me, I said while crying and circling my arms around my chest, 'It hurts' and I was hoping, he might let me go atleast at that moment to see me in pain, but it encouraged him even more."

"He asked those two boys to held my hands and legs tightly. They too obeyed him and held me with all force they could use. I understood nothing was going to work, so I closed my eyes and was ready to get hit again and again. That boy took out all my remaining clothes and left me with nothing. I opened my eyes to see why and what he was doing. With lust in his eyes, he touched me everywhere on my body. He didn't

even left the part where I was hurt. When he touched my chest with dirty smile on his face, I screamed as it really hurt badly. I kept screaming my throat out but he didn't stop. Finally, it was like, I was used to that pain and stopped feeling anything."

Hmmm! Each passing second and each word from Jiang YuYan was making it hard for Lu Qiang to listen this cruel act of those bastards. There was darkness in his pitch Black eyes which was making him look scary. He tightened the grip of his other hand which was on railing and looked like he was going to bend it like a stick while his other hand was still caressing her hand.

"He leaned closer to me while my hands and legs were held by other two boys. He kissed me, bite me hit me and did what he could do to vent his anger on me. I couldn't feel pain but I was feeling disgusted and couldn't stop feeling like that. I didn't know what is called as dying but I was praying that if I could die at that very moment. Suddenly he stopped and I thought, finally it ended and he will let me go. I opened my eyes, just to see, he was removing his clothes while looking at me like hungry wolf and other two boys were saying something to him and were laughing."

158 I Am Doing It For Myself...

“I was wondering why he was doing that? Did I do something to dirty his clothes? I immediately apologised, ‘I..I am.. sorry, if I ruined your clothes. I will ask my brother to buy you new one.’ He laughed again and said, ‘I don’t know about clothes but you are ruining my mood, so shut your mouth.’ I still didn’t understand what he was saying. I didn’t know what wrong I did but I just wanted to keep apologising to him for no reason so that he could let me go. He removed his clothes and I didn’t feel good to see him. I forgot about all that pain and I was struggling to free my hands and my legs with all my strength, after seeing him naked. I looked at those two boys and asked them to let me go but they laughed and said, ‘We have yet to taste you. How can we let you go?’ All started to laugh at me. Then, that golden hair boy stepped towards me and asked other boy to let go of my legs. As he freed my legs, that golden hair boy pulled me with my legs towards him and stood between them. I could understand, being without clothes was not good thing and it felt disgusting that I felt like to vomit at the very moment.”

Jiang Yuyan suddenly stopped with the that disgusting memory from her past. Her voice choked in her throat. Lu Qiang couldn’t take it anymore and he turned towards her to say ‘Stop’. As he was about to stop her, Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, “Let me finish it.” Lu Qiang wiped her tears and said, “You don’t need to.” Jiang Yuyan looked in his eyes with her teary ones while holding his hands in hers and said, “I am doing it for myself. I never talked about it to anyone. Today I want to take it out from my heart and my mind. I don’t want to suffer with it anymore by keeping it buried in my heart and never say a word about it. I still remember each and everything clearly. Let me say it.”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Okay!” Jiang Yuyan continued while lowering her face as she couldn’t say it while looking

into his eyes.

“He had devilish smile on his face. He was determined to do something bad but before he could do it, suddenly the door of room opened with bang as someone broke it. I lifted my head little by gathering last bit of energy in me to look at the door. My brother was standing in the door with angry face with two security guards from there behind him. As I saw him, I felt glad but before I could even call my brother, I passed out. After that what happened, I didn't know.”

Jiang Yuyan finished it and stood there, lowering her head down in front of Lu Qiang with tears rolling down from her eyes, continuously.

“Those scars you saw around my chest was the result that incident, as I had few broken ribs.” she said while looking at him with painful smile on her face.

Lu Qiang remembered those scars on her chest and hugged her again. He stood there just like that without saying a single word to her. He didn't know how to Console her as it was something that couldn't be healed by just words. Jiang Yuyan was crying her heart out as she felt relieved to let out everything which was buried in her heart for long, the sad memories from her past, while Lu Qiang was just patting her head lightly.

Once Jiang YuYan stopped crying, Lu Qiang asked, “Are you feeling better now?” Jiang Yuyan lifted her head up and said while looking into his eyes, “Never like before.” Lu Qiang smiled a little and said, “I am glad.”

Jiang Yuyan was fine after sometime and both were looking at the sky, enjoying the silence around. Jiang Yuyan spoke again, “I wish, I never went there and was with you all these years.”

Lu Qiang replied, “Me too but it's okay. We can't bring back the past but we can make our present and future better and can fill it with all good and happy memories. Also, I will make sure to make up for those missing years too.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Hmm! We should do that.”

“Really?” Lu Qiang suddenly pulled her towards him with little tug and said, “Then, we should start it from this moment.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with surprised expressions. Before she could ask anything, Lu Qiang lifted her in his arms and took her inside the room. He straight took her to bathroom and put her down in front of wash basin. He asked her to bent little towards the basin as he opened the tap. He washed her face and even cleaned her blocked nose.

Jiang Yuyan stopped him as he touched her nose as saying, “Eww! How can you? It’s yukk.”

Lu Qiang didn’t stop and said, “Be like a good girl and let me do it. Your snot and I are familiar with each other since our childhood” Jiang Yuyan had to listen to him even though she didn’t want to.

Lu Qiang took her to bed and tucked her in it to sleep. “U must be tired, u need good rest.”

Jiang Yuyan shook her head while lying in a bed and said, “I don’t want to.”

Lu Qiang sat on the edge of the bed and asked, “Then what do you want to do?”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “I want to hug you n be with you here in bed.”

Lu Qiang smiled and nodded saying, Okay.”

Lu Qiang too slept beside her, hugged her. Jiang Yuyan was tired because of continuous crying and fell asleep soon.

Lu Qiang lifted her head little to pull back his arm from below her head. He sat up and covered her in a quilt. Lu Qiang had no expressions on his face but there was darkness in his pitch black eyes which made him look scary.

159 Those Three Words...

Lu Qiang picked up his cellphone and went to the gallery. He dialed one number. As the person from other side of the line received a call, Lu Qiang spoke, "Meet me tomorrow."

Person from other side of the line asked, "So you know everything now?"

Lu Qiang replied, "Not everything."

Person from other side of the line asked again, "I hope, you are not planning to kill anyone."

Lu Qiang replied coldly, "Killing is an easy option and I don't like to go on easy way. Meet me tomorrow."

Man on the other side, "Well before you could decide anything on your own, I too want to tell you something very important so let's meet tomorrow."

Lu Qiang said 'Okay' and cut the call. He went back to bed and slept beside Jiang Yuyan. It was almost dawn. Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan's calm face. He still couldn't believe that something terrible could happen to her. His heart was aching after knowing her past.

Next morning, when Jiang Yuyan woke up, Lu Qiang was not in bed beside her. She felt little anxious as not to see Lu Qiang around her. She immediately sat up in a bed to see him. Lu Qiang was sitting in a couch while going through some documents in his hands. When he saw, Jiang Yuyan awake, he looked at her with smile. Jiang Yuyan felt relieved to see him there. She got off from the bed and ran towards couch just to hug Lu Qiang tightly and buried her face in the crook of his neck. She felt relax to feel warmth of his body and his manly smell and realized it was not dream and he was actually sitting there.

Lu Qiang hugged her too and asked, "What happened?"

Jiang Yuyan replied, "I thought you left."

Lu Qiang held her chin and lifted her face up to look into her eyes and said, “Did you forget what I said before that I will never leave without informing you.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “I know but it was scary when I didn’t see you beside me.”

Lu Qiang kissed on her forehead and said, “I will always be around you so no need to be scared.”

Jiang Yuyan asked to make sure, “Really?”

Lu Qiang nodded, “Hmm!” Jiang Yuyan again buried her face in his chest and closed her eyes. She was feeling happy to be in his embrace. She felt protected. She sniffed into his chest and neck then said, “You smells really good. I feel good whenever I am able to feel you and smell you.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “Well, I know other ways to make you feel better.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at him with puzzled expressions. When she looked into his eyes, she understood, what did he mean. This time she immediately stood up from couch and stepped away from him without giving him a chance to hold her back.

Lu Qiang smiled lightly with one corner of his lips curved upward. He knew why she moved away from him. He finds her cute that made him to think about to do the things that he didn’t plan to. “What happened?”, he asked.

Jiang Yuyan replied while stepping back, “I know what did you mean by making me feel better.”

Lu Qiang too got up from couch and said, “You have started to understand me better now. You are getting smarter day by day” and slowly stepped towards her with his both hands tucked in his pockets.

Jiang Yuyan too replied straightforwardly, “After spending all these nights with you, knowing you at least this much is given.”

“I want you to know me even better”, Lu Qiang said as he again took one step towards her but slowly.

Jiang Yuyan immediately replied, “I don’t want to, right now.”

Lu Qiang calmly stepped towards her and said, “But I want to know you too.”

Jiang Yuyan stepped back but there was bed behind her, so she climbed the bed to run away from him. Lu Qiang was calm and stood near bed with his hands still in his pockets. He was not in hurry to catch her. “Do you really think, you can run away from me?”

Jiang Yuyan was standing on bed and said, “I will do my best.”

Lu Qiang looked at her with his one eyebrow curved upward. “Your best? Hmm! Lets see.” and with one easy jump, he was on bed and caught Jiang Yuyan not giving her a chance to move even a bit. He grabbed her wrist and pulled her towards him. He held her tightly by circling his hands around her waist. Jiang Yuyan tried to get away by pushing him with her hands on his chest. Lu Qiang was steady and calm, allowing her to do what she wanted.

Once Jiang Yuyan realized, nothing was going to work against his strength, she gave up and looked tired. Lu Qiang looked at her and asked, “Done?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded a little with her eyes lowered down. Lu Qiang spoke, “Now it’s my turn.” As he said it, Jiang Yuyan covered her mouth with her palm. She knew, he was going to kiss her. Lu Qiang didn’t say anything. He kept moving his sight from her eyes to her hand which was covering her lips. Both were standing on bed just like that. Finally Jiang Yuyan had to remove her hand as Lu Qiang continued to look at her.

As Jiang Yuyan removed her hand, Lu Qiang smiled teasingly and kissed her. Jiang Yuyan didn’t resist and let him be. Lu Qiang started with soft kisses but it didn’t take much time for him to take over her with his passionate kiss. While kissing, Lu Qiang Lifted her and both lied down in a bed. After sharing one breathless kiss, Lu Qiang parted away from her and said while panting heavily, “I Love You Yuyan!”

These words from him were like sugar for her ears. Tears rolled down from her eyes as she heard it. After going through her traumatic past last night, these words from him were

comforting for her. His love was fortunate thing for her. Though she had yet to confess her feelings to him, he never asked her to do that. He was waiting for her to say it. With the current status of their relationship, there was no need of her confession, as it was clear what she felt but those simple three words could make a huge difference.

160 I Deserve It...

Lu Qiang wiped her tears in corner of her eyes and said, "From this moment, you are not allowed to cry."

Jiang Yuyan nodded and replied, "I won't." Lu Qiang moved away and finally let go of her. As Jiang Yuyan went to bathroom, Lu Qiang picked up his cell phone, typed one message and sent it to someone.

After Lunch... In living room...

Lu Qiang was ready to go out. He called Lu Lijun and said, "I am going out for some work, take care of Yuyan and give her company,"

Lu Lijun nodded and said, "As you say elder brother."

Jiang Yuyan was there too. She didn't ask anything but just looked at Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang knew she wanted to ask where he was going as it was Sunday and when will he be back? Lu Qiang looked at her and said, "I am going to meet a friend and will be back in evening." Jiang Yuyan nodded as saying 'okay'.

Lu Lijun too looked at her and said, "Don't worry, I will be with you and you won't miss elder brother anymore."

Lu Qiang moved his sight from Jiang Yuyan to Lu Lijun in surprise and said with light smile on his face, while running his fingers through Lu Lijun's hair, "You are becoming smarter day by day."

Jiang Yuyan replied sarcastically, "After all he is your brother and took after you. I can see it clearly."

Lu Lijun laughed a little and said, "Right and I will be the next brother Lu Qiang."

Lu Qiang patted his head and said, "You would be better than me."

Lu Qiang said bye to Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun. Just as he stepped out of the mansion door, Lu Feng came in front of

him. Lu Qiang halted in his steps and asked, “What?”

Lu Feng looked in his eyes and said, “Take it easy.”

“Get out of my way.” Lu Qiang said with calm expression on his face but his eyes were saying something else.

“Though your face looks calm, you can’t hide what is in your eyes and what I see right now, is not good.” said Lu Feng

Lu Qiang sighed and pinched the space between his eyebrows and said, “Everything is fine, you don’t need to be worried about me.”

“There is no need to be worried about you. I am worried about someone else.” Lu Feng replied.

As Lu Feng was not getting out of Lu Qiang’s way, Lu Qiang said, “If you are that worried then go ahead and save him.”

Lu Feng sighed and said, “I think I have no other option then” and stepped towards Lu Qiang’s car which was in front of mansion’s door. He immediately sat in the back passenger sit.

Lu Qiang too stepped towards his car and sat inside. He didn’t ask Lu Feng to get down. Lu Qiang asked driver to go to one famous hotel in the city.

While having Lunch, Lu Feng noticed there was change in Lu Qiang which others couldn’t notice but Lu Feng was familiar with each breath taken by his brother. For Lu Feng, Lu Qiang’s eyes never failed to show what is in his mind. Lu Feng knew, he was up to something and that must be related to Jiang Yuyan. He called Jiang Yang and asked him if there was something. Jiang Yang told him that Lu Qiang knew everything and Lu Feng understood, what Lu Qiang was thinking.

After an hour, car arrived in front of the hotel. Lu Qiang and Lu Feng entered inside. On reception Lu Qiang collected his keys and asked, “Is my guest here?” Receptionist replied, “Not yet, sir.”

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng straight went to the VIP room of that hotel which was booked by Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang stood near the glass window and was staring out side while immersed in his

thoughts. Lu Feng sat in the couch lazily with his legs on the center table. Lu Qiang was checking time on his wrist watch again and again. To look at him, Lu Feng finally spoke, “He will come in a while, don’t get hyper.”

Just as Lu Qiang was about to reply him back, someone knocked on the door and then opened it. As the person entered inside the room, Lu Qiang stepped towards him in hurry and punched him in the face, really hard that made the corner of his lips bleed and made him stepped back. He looked at Lu Qiang and said while wiping the blood in the corner of his lips with his thumb, “I deserve it.”

Lu Feng was still sitting in a couch and said, “I am enjoying this but still take it easy Lu Qiang. That was not his fault.”

Lu Qiang again stepped towards him and hit him on the side of face. The man fell back again and it made him bleed too. He got up from floor, looked into Lu Qiang’s eyes and said, “No, it was all my fault. I was not able to protect her.”

Lu Qiang stepped towards him and held him by his collar. He wanted to punch him even more but he stopped. Lu Feng was about to get up from couch to stop Lu Qiang but when he saw, Lu Qiang stopped, he gave out a sigh of relief and sat back in couch, retrieving his comfortable position to sit.

“Why did you stop? I am an useless brother. Hit me all you want. I desperately wanted someone to beat me to death at that moment but you guys were not there to do that. Hit me for being careless brother, Lu Qiang.”

Lu Qiang retreated his hand and hugged him. Tears rolled down from Jiang Yang’s eyes and he too hugged Lu Qiang back. It was the first time, when Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were seeing him crying. Both knew, how hurting it must be for him to see his little sister in pain. She was everything for him since the day she born. He never showed his pain to anyone and instead diverted his all attention to his sister just to take care of her so that she can live a normal life.

161 It Was All My Fault..

Lu Qiang was angry with the fact, how could something cruel happen to Jiang Yuyan when Jiang Yang, her brother was with her. He promised to take care of her but he failed to fulfill it. At the same time, Lu Qiang was aware of the fact that Jiang Yang was hurting the most. He had always been hiding his pain behind his smile and funny words but now it was time for him to let go of what he kept buried in his heart for all these years for the sake of his sister.

It was obvious thing to understand for Lu Qiang and Lu Feng, if they were this much angry just to hear what happened to Jiang Yuyan then what might have happened to Jiang Yang, when he himself saw his sister in that condition. Lu Qiang hit him because he knew, Jiang Yang needed it and Lu Feng too didn't stop him. Lu Feng was worried for a moment that Lu Qiang might take out his anger on Jiang Yang for not being able to protect Jiang Yuyan but when he saw what Lu Qiang was up to, he didn't meddle in between. There was something between these friends that was unspoken and they could understand it better without saying a single word.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng felt relieved to see Jiang Yang crying. Lu Qiang hugged him and Jiang Yang continued crying his heart out and was blaming himself for everything that happened.

“It was my fault... I should have look after her properly... I ignored, when she told me about her being bullied by someone... It was all my fault.”

Lu Qiang didn't stop him from venting out everything and Lu Feng too sat silently on couch just to not disturb Jiang Yang from letting out sorrow in his heart.

Jiang Yang continued saying, “It was all my fault... I couldn't protect my sister from getting hurt by those bastards... I couldn't do anything but watch her scream and cry.”

More he was remembering the past, more he was crying. Finally only few words left to say. "It was all my fault... It was all my fault..." After while, Jiang Yang stopped crying. Lu Qiang let go of him and asked, "Are you feeling better now?"

Jiang Yang replied, "Never like before."

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and asked, "You and your sister, always reply me with same words. Have both of you practiced the same answers to my question?"

Jiang Yang replied, "You should change your question then."

"Okay! This much beating is enough or you want more?" asked Lu Qiang while passing Jiang Yang tissue papers and even helped him to clean his face.

Lu Feng felt relieved to see it but then he smiled mischievously and said. "Ohh! What a beautiful site to see. I should have brought some beer and popcorn here. Nice show, with a beautiful girl, her handsome brother free, great offer."

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang both looked at Lu Feng with killer gazes. "Tsk! Did I disturbed you guys? Continue, I will close my eyes."

Lu Qiang let go of Jiang Yang and said while looking at Lu Feng who closed his eyes, "I think someone here, too wants to get hit by me." Jiang Yang whispered, "Let me handle him."

Jiang Yang stepped towards Lu Feng and sat beside him, "Ouch! Darling, its hurting. See I am bleeding. Aaahh!" Lu Feng opened his eyes but he didn't frown. Instead he grabbed few tissues from the box on center table and cleaned the blood in the corner of Jiang Yang's lips.

"Yeah, I can see that my darling is hurt. One moron hit you really bad." said Lu Feng and looked at Lu Qiang. This reply from Lu Feng surprised Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang. He was calm, opposite to his angry nature. They understood, it was because Jiang Yang just came out of his sorrow. Lu Feng was trying to make him feel good too. Jiang Yang felt emotional again. He took tissue from Lu Feng's hand and said, "Stop it or this free brother in offer might fall in love with you."

Lu Feng replied, “Don’t scare me like this. I am straight.”

Jiang Yang replied, “So do I” and smiled.

Lu Qiang was happy to see Jiang Yang smiling. He called room service and ordered drinks for three of them.

Jiang Yang went to freshen up while Lu Qiang and Lu Feng sat in the couch. Lu Qiang was sitting calmly while thinking about something. Lu Feng looked at him and said, “You did well. He will be fine.”

Lu Qiang sighed and said, “Hmm! I know.”

Lu Feng asked, “How is Yuyan?”

“She is fine. Feeling relaxed after letting out everything once and for all.” replied Lu Qiang.

“These both really needed it. I was worried about Yuyan but as you are there for her so she will be fine but we need to be with Jiang Yang too. I saw him, sometimes hiding so many things behind his smile.”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “I know.”

Jiang Yang came out of the bathroom and sat next to his friends. Just in a while, room service was there as Lu Qiang had ordered drinks for three of them. As Lu Feng saw it, he looked at Lu Qiang and asked, “Are you planning to get drunk again? Trust me, this time I will throw you out of this room.”

Lu Qiang replied, “It’s for both of you. I will just take a little.”

Jiang Yang, “Why? Are you afraid, my sister might kick you out of her room?”

Lu Qiang replied in a firm voice, “She will take me in, however I am.”

Jiang Yang looked at Lu Feng and said, “He is giving us a dog food again.”

Lu Feng replied, “Haaa! He is best at it.”

Lu Qiang smiled and just signaled them towards the drinks.

“Okay, Mr President” said Jiang Yang and poured wine in three glasses. Everyone was ready to pick up theirs but before

Lu Qiang could get his glass, Lu Feng picked it up and poured some wine from Lu Qiang's glass to his own, leaving only a little in it. He passed that glass to Lu Qiang and said, "This much is enough for you."

162 Witnessing The Past Again...

Lu Qiang gave him a questioning look before receiving a glass from Lu Feng. Lu Feng replied, "I am not worried about you. I just don't want you to trouble a lady."

Lu Qiang understood what Lu Feng was talking about. He didn't say anything and behaved obediently for the sake of his woman.

All three started to drink, suddenly Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yang and said, "Tell the things, that I should know."

Lu Feng corrected him and said, "We should know!"

Lu Qiang nodded to what Lu Feng said and asked Jiang Yang again.

Jiang Yang knew what Lu Qiang was talking about and he was already prepared to tell him everything when he got call from him in the middle of the night. Lu Feng too had so many questions in his mind as he too didn't know lots of things like Lu Qiang. The day, when Jiang Yang told him everything, Lu Feng was too angry to ask him anything else.

Jiang Yang took a sip of wine and was thinking, from where to start while Lu Feng and Lu Qiang were ready to hear him out. Finally Jiang Yang got hold of memories from past and started to narrate it.

"After going to USA, we all were happy but Yuyan. She used to miss all of you and she was already hurt with the death of our grandma. She missed her too. It was new world for her. She had been pampered girl since the day she born and she only had three us to be with her when we were in china. To make her familiarised with that new world, my parents enrolled into one summer camp and thought it would be better for her before she starts her schooling there."

“Her being angry was the biggest issue and I asked her to control it. She was an obedient child. She tried her best to not get into a fight with anyone. She told me once, someone from her camp bully her and she was not happy about it. Me and my parents thought it’s normal to happen with new person at new place and once she will make few friends, she would be fine. After all, they were kids and what harm could it cause. She will learn how to adjust with new people.”

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were listening to him carefully. Though Lu Qiang knew this through Jiang Yuyan, he wanted to hear other side of the story and also what happened after that. Lu Feng too wanted to know what happened with Jiang Yuyan and those boys after that. Jiang Yang continued.

“One day she came back to home and was upset about her fight with one boy. I promised her to solve it by coming to her camp. Next day it was her birthday. Me and my parents gifted her something and she was happy. I sent her to camp with lots of chocolates and cake with her for all kids there and told her, ‘I will take her to amusement park after her class’. That day I left her to camp and I told her that I will come to receive her, instead of my mother. I still remember her smiling and bright face when she said bye to me with the excitement of going out me after her class.”

Jiang Yang then looked at Lu Qiang and Lu Feng and asked, “Remember both of you called me to wish her for her birthday?”

Both Lu Qiang and Lu Feng nodded and said together, “Yes!”

Jiang Yang continued. “It was the time when I was going back after dropping her to camp and I said, ‘I will call both of you later’.”

Both Lu Qiang and Lu Feng nodded in response.

In afternoon, I went to pick her up. I was waiting for her at outside of the gate of her camp place. As I reached there, kids were going back to there home. I was waiting for Yuyan to come out but she didn’t. I asked one of the kid whom I know was with her in the camp that where is Yuyan. He told me, she was with one boy named Jason. I remembered the name and

understood, it was the same boy with whom Yuyan fought the other day. I felt worried and asked him where they went. He said, ‘somewhere in the back side of the building’.”

“I went inside the classroom building in hurry to check if they were fighting again. I asked guard, if he saw any kid while going towards back side of the building and he said he didn’t. I went towards back side of building but there was nothing but one small and old room like place far away in one corner so I thought why kids would go there and I ignored it. I searched for them in class rooms but both were not there. Finally I had to ask guard to check in CCTV camera. In recording, i saw, she was going with one boy behind the deserted area of the building and there was no recording of her coming back. I decided to go there immediately, just then I saw a boy who was with her in CCTV camera recording, but he was alone without having Yuyan with him.”

“I stopped that boy and asked, ‘Where is Yuyan?’ Upon seeing and hearing me that boy looked scared. He replied that he didn’t know with his shaking voice. I was restless and angry. I raised my voice and asked again so finally he told me, Yuyan was in that old room far away from main building which I avoided to check. I cursed myself and ran towards that room as fast as I could. Two guards there, followed me too. As I reached near the room, I heard her screaming but as I reached the door, there was no sound of her screaming or crying. My heart almost stopped beating as I was scared for something bad might have happened to her.”

163 Suffering...

Both Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were feeling each and every word said by Jiang Yang. Jiang Yang was immersed in those sad memories from the past while narrating the whole incident. He had painful expressions on his face. All three were holding the glasses of wine in their hands but nobody was drinking it. They seem like went back in the past when that incident happened and were witnessing it through Jiang Yang's eyes.

“When I reached the door, I didn't wait for a moment and kicked it as hard as I could. It opened easily as it was old. As the door opened completely, I saw, Yuyan was lying naked on table with one boy holding her hands above her head and one was standing in between her legs without a single piece of clothes on him. The third one was standing beside like bystander and was laughing.”

I was too shocked to see this. When those boys saw me, they immediately moved away from her. I saw Yuyan looked at me and went unconscious. I ran towards her as fast as I could and covered her with my jacket. I wanted to kill those bastards right at that moment but I saw Yuyan was hurt and she looked lifeless. I was scared to death. Till then guards already called for ambulance which arrived in just ten minutes, as hospital was near to that place but those ten minutes were like living in a hell for me.”

“Those boys tried to run away but guards caught them and called for police too. I took Yuyan to hospital and called my parents. My father was angry after seeing Yuyan lifeless. He straight went to the police station to see those bastards and to take action against them, while mom and me stayed back in hospital.”

“Yuyan was unconscious for almost two days. She had broken ribs and internal bleeding, because those bastards hit her without a mercy. Doctors were trying their best but she was not waking up. On third day when she regained her consciousness, she was just screaming and crying not allowing

anyone to come near her. My mother was shocked to see her precious daughter like this and she couldn't handle it. She blamed herself for bringing Yuyan to that country against her wish."

"Doctor had to make her unconscious to treat her wounds. It was hard for them to control her. We had to call psychiatrist too who told us she was in a trauma and it will take time to get her out of it. He said, 'she need to trust at least one person so that she won't be alone or she might get serious nervous breakdown'. In few days, my mom tried to talk to her but she didn't respond, not even to my dad. Finally I decided to try it. When I called her name and went to her, she didn't resist my presence near her. She didn't scream or tried to hide her face from me."

"All were surprised to see this. Psychiatrist said, "It was good thing and I should be with her. It was because, I was the person who saved her and i was the last one whom she saw before she got unconscious and might have thought about me as her savior. Also, since she was a child, she trusted me the most. Since that day, I became her shadow and followed her everywhere."

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng didn't disturbed him in between as Jiang Yang looked immersed in flow of the things happened in a past. He was talking nonstop.

"I got the admit from the university where I dreamed to study space science and that was the reason for my family to move to US. I rejected it as Yuyan needed me. Also, I blamed myself for her condition. Because of me, we moved to USA and because of my ignorance she had go through that condition. I decided to be with her always till the day she will need me.

She was in hospital for one month and bedridden. During that month, she didn't let anyone touch her or even come to her room too. I had to do everything for her, as she was a child and was hurt too, so forcing her was not acceptable. Whenever doctor had to do their job, even after a month of time, they had to make her unconscious and treat her wounds. Your father, uncle Lu Jinhai was there during that period, he saw her and helped my father to deal with those bastards. In few days,

Grandpa Lu came to see her too and I told both, your father and your grandpa, not to tell both of you about this.”

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng, both looked at him with questioning sight as asking ‘Why?’

Jiang Yang answered to their unspoken question. “I didn’t want you guys to see her in that condition as it was too hurting to see her like that. I was aware that you guys were calling me again and again but i didn’t reply. Instead i changed my number. Why? I don’t know that, but I think, I was ashamed to face both of you and also, I had to focus on Yuyan first instead of answering to anyone.”

To hear it both didn’t say anything and continued to hear what Jiang Yang was about to say further.

“For almost a month, I heard her crying and screaming in hospital. She was even scared of dark that I had to keep lights in room on, all the time. There was not a single night, when she didn’t have nightmares. Still sometimes she get those nightmares which shake her to the core.”

To this, Lu Qiang nodded and said, “I know!” He remembered all the time when he saw her suffering because of nightmares. Jiang Yang continued...

“After a month, when she came back to home, she didn’t want to get out of her room. If I go out for a single moment and left her alone, she wont allow me to go. For whole six months, she didn’t say a single word like she was a mute. I had to understand what she wanted or what she was thinking just by her expressions or her other actions. She never asked for anything like she was just a living corpse. I am too habitual to her behavior for all these years, that I can understand each of her thoughts and everything about her without a single word spoken.

164 Suspicious...

“I gave up on my studies and used to be with her all the time. We changed our home to different side of the city as we wanted to keep her away from those memories from that place, as the place of that camp was near from the previous home. I tried different ways to make her smile but only two things caught her attention and that were Jackie Chan’s movies and Kung Fu in it.”

“Daily we used to see one movie and only during that time, I got to see her smiling, but there was something behind that smile which I was not able to figure it out. During next six months she started to talk at least something. Like, if I asked her or tell her a thing, instead of just nodding or shaking her head, she started to reply me with ‘Yes’ or ‘No’ with calling me again as ‘Brother Yang’ and it was pleasant for me to hear it again after so long.”

Once, when we were sitting in a garden I asked, ‘What did she wanted me to become?’ And she said, ‘Doctor, who can treat sick hearts’. It was because, my grandma died because of the heart problem and she was already sad with her death. So, Yuyan is the reason, I became cardiologist. Fulfilling her wish was the only thing I wanted to do during that time and still I am living to fulfill all her wishes. After that, I started to prepare for medical studies.”

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng nodded as agreeing to what he said and as replying back that he is one best brother, a girl could have.

“As she liked Kung Fu, we both enrolled to Kung Fu classes. She started to learn Kung Fu and she was really good at it. Also, she always was doing something with laptop and few books of programmings. I knew she was a bright kid with best IQ and must be curious about lots of things, so I never paid attention to what she was doing, as long as it could make her happy. I got to know the reason behind her Kung Fu love and that something to do in laptop, after few years, but it was too late till then.”

Lu Feng asked, “What reason?” Lu Qiang too looked at him with questioning gaze.

Jiang Yang replied, “I will tell both of you later.”

“One year was about to pass by but still she was scared of people from outside. My parents and me were the only people in her world, for that year. Next year, once I got admitted to medical school, I said to her, ‘I listened to you and going to be a doctor soon so you should listen to me now’. She agreed and I asked her to start schooling.”

“She was hesitant but agreed as she couldn’t say no to me. She started schooling but most of the days she studied from home. She was scared of boys and men around her so we too didn’t force her. We got permission for study from home, as school considered her condition. For that year, she studied from home as we want her to take things slowly. As she was already a brilliant student, it was not difficult for her to study there. I too started to attend university and we both were coming to normal life. I was on my way to become a doctor and she too started to attend school regularly.”

“In vacation, we used to plan a tour to different places and different countries to change atmosphere around her. She enjoyed travelling a lot. When we went to Greece, she liked the art there and chose to paint, though she was very good with studies. We too supported her. It went all good till her sixteenth birthday. Few days before her sixteenth birthday, something happened that shocked me and my parents.”

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng both looked at Jiang Yang with worried expressions as they thought something bad might have happened to her again.

“One day, both of us planned to go for dinner in the evening, once I got free on that day from my studies. In afternoon, I got to know that, I won’t be able to be free as there was an emergency situation in hospital and they needed more hands to help them out. Me and my batch mates were going to be busy for whole day and might be in night too. I called Yuyan in that afternoon to say, it won’t be possible to go for dinner that evening. She had no problem with it and everything was fine.

Before getting busy in my work, I checked her location in my cellphone to know where she was. She was in her school. I had installed tracker in her cell phone with the help of one of my friend who was good in all these things. I did it because, whenever I was away from her I used to be worried about her whereabouts and it was because of what happened with her on that day.”

I was busy in my work whole day. In the evening I checked my cell phone and planned to call Yuyan to apologize to her for not being able to take her for dinner. Out of habit I first checked her location. I was shocked to see where she was. It scared the hell out of me. I didn't think for a single moment and got out of the hospital after informing them I had family emergency.”

With each word from Jiang Yang, heartbeats of Lu Qiang and Lu Feng were running faster and faster. They too felt worried to think that again something might have happened to her and were ready to hear it with heavy heart.

“I got into my car and moved in the direction of her location. In my cell phone, I continuously kept checking her location. I saw she was moving closer and closer towards the place where I didn't want her to go. I speed up my car and moved as fast as I could. She was in the other side of the city and too far from where I was. I saw she stopped at that place for sometime and after ten minutes she moved again. After 15 minutes again she stopped and she was only there until I reached to that place in next half hour.

165 Scary Yuyan...

“I straight moved towards where she was. When I entered that area, It was deserted and had multiple alleys which were dark and silent. Not a single sound was there. I felt worried even more as to remember what happened to her in the past, in that deserted place behind her study camp. I parked my car somewhere as I couldn't take my car inside those alleys. I jumped out of the car and ran towards her location, with my mobile in my hand and my eyes fixed on her movements.”

“My heart was almost in my throat and I was cursing the world. I crossed few alleys and finally reached to the one where I could see the location of Yuyan in my cell phone. With rock on my chest, I stepped inside the alley. It was quite dark and I was not able to see anything clear from a distance. I could guess, someone was lying on floor and was whining in pain while the other person was standing beside that person, wearing a black hoodie with one metal rod in hand and his back was facing towards me. That person was about to hit the person lying on floor. I thought that's Yuyan on floor and I shouted my throat out, ‘STOP’.”

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng, gripped the glasses in their hands tightly as they had to hear, something painful again happened to her.

“That person stopped to hear me out and I ran towards them as fast I could. When I reached close, I saw a man lying on floor covered in a blood and looked half dead. I felt sad to see him but at the same time felt relieved to see, that was not Yuyan. Something clicked in my mind and I looked at other person as I could guess from the silhouette, it was Yuyan. I was in shock and didn't know what to say or do at that moment. Everything looked so scary in that dark and silent place that I wanted to deny, it was Yuyan. I rooted to the place behind her, where I was standing, few steps away from her and ready to get shock of my life.”

“Next moment the person turned to look at me. I was praying, it should not be Yuyan but it was her. She had no expression on her face and looked scary. I was way too shock to see my innocent sister like this. The girl who had never even wanted to hurt a tiny ant in her life, was looking like a devil at that moment with blood on her hands and face. She looked like lost in another world and I felt as she was another person. I couldn't help but just call her name in shock. The moment I called her name, she dropped that rod in her hand to the floor and called my name, 'Brother Yang.' as she came back to her senses. Tears rolled down from her eyes as she looked like in pain and she was about to go unconscious. Before she could fall on ground I stepped towards her in hurry and held her.”

Upon hearing, that was Yuyan and she could hurt someone, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng felt shocked too. But they felt relieved to know that nothing happened to her again.

“I checked her to see if she had any injury but she didn't. I didn't know what to do at that moment. That person on ground was covered in blood and his face looked mess that I couldn't recognize who was he. I didn't think about him as I was more concerned about Yuyan. Also, I was sure, that man must have done something wrong to end up in such condition. I wanted to take Yuyan away and disappear from there. I called my father and told him everything. My father asked me to take Yuyan away from there and he will handle the situation. I did what exactly my father said.”

“I took Yuyan to home in her unconscious condition. I didn't want anyone to know about this as it was serious incidence. If something was about to happen, I was ready to take blame on me for everything instead of her. As I reached home, I called my doctor friend who was senior to me and was a psychiatrist in the same hospital. I trusted my friend, so preferred to inform him only. He was a good doctor and I was already consulting him regarding Yuyan's condition to feel scared of other men. I told him what happened in the alley but only the part I knew, as other things were possible to get them from Yuyan only, like why and how she end up there in that allay and what happened between her and that injured man.”

“She was still unconscious as didn’t want to wake up from her sleep and was trying to hide again. My friend injected her with medicine so that she could get nice sleep and when she will wake up, she should feel relax and answer our questions. My friend asked me not to worry and left to return back next day. Mom came back to home as my dad informed her. She too was shocked to hear what I told her. Dad took care of that guy and other matters with the help of few people over there who had quite a good hold on power and it was easy for my father as he was in a ministry.”

“Next day morning, Yuyan woke up and she looked normal as nothing happened. We didn’t know how to ask her as we were worried, how she will react. We decided to give her time and acted normal too. That day, I didn’t go to hospital and she was at home too. She was behaving normally and was busy with her art work which she enjoyed the most. After lunch my psychiatrist friend came to home to see her. I was avoiding to talk to her about what happened last night and I asked my friend to do the same. Me and my friend were sitting in my room and were discussing about her, suddenly there was knock on the door and Yuyan entered the room. We became silent to see her. She sat in one chair and looked at both of us with serious expressions on her face.”

166 Start Of Revenge Plan...

I looked at her and asked, “What happened? Do you need anything?” My friend was looking at her too and he guessed, why she was there.

She shook her head and said, “No! I am here to tell you something that you want to ask me but hesitating to do so.”

Upon hearing her straightforward words we both were quite shocked. There, we were in dilemma as how to start conversation with her about incident from last night and here she was ready to tell us on her own. She looked serious and different from her usual self as she was one mysterious person. Also, after seeing her the night before, I too felt like I didn't know her completely yet.”

“I didn't know what to say but I was feeling glad that she wanted to share it. When I wanted to say her, you can tell us, my doctor friend, Christian replied to her in calm way with pleasant smile on his face, “That's a good thing. Whatever is there, tell us without any hesitation. I am a doctor too, you know that right?”

Yuyan nodded as saying, “I know you are a psychiatrist who is helping brother Yang to treat me.”

“I was still thinking of her as a kid but then realized she was not anymore. Though she acted ignorant to lots of things, she was aware of each and everything that was happening around her. I was worried, I might lose my innocent and sweet little sister whom I took care of as my own child. Since that incident, I was like a mother to her. I did everything that one mother should do for her daughter. I wanted her to be my innocent and lovable Yuyan not the way she was at that moment, in front of me, mysterious and unpredictable.”

“Christian smiled to hear what she said. He understood, she was one smart kid or could be more than that. He got up from couch and sat in the chair beside her. He looked at her with his usual pleasant smile and said, “But, I don't want to be a doctor

to you. I deserves to get such a pretty and smart girl as my little sister. What say? Will you be my sister too, Yuyan?”

“Yuyan looked at him when he called her name. Other than three of us nobody called her with just her name ever. It was always like Jiang Yuyan. She first observed christian carefully before he could say anything. Her sight moved from, his golden hair, blue eyes which were looking at her like they were trying to figure it out what was she thinking, sharp and thin nose, pleasantly smiling lips which could make anyone comfortable around him. Once she observed him, she nodded and said, “Okay!”

“Though she was smart and looked normal, we knew she needed help. She can’t keep everything buried in her heart, as it might affect her in long term and disturb her normal life. Christian finally asked her, ‘Tell me whatever you want to share with us. I am sure, there is a valid reason to what happened last night. And whatever it is, we are always there with you. We will protect our little sister’.”

“Upon hearing it, serious expressions on her face became normal one. She looked little sad and puzzled too, might be scared a bit. She was after all just sixteen year old girl. She started to narrate what and how everything happened and we both were shocked to hear it but didn’t show it on our faces. As a doctors, we were aware, how we should be in front of a patient and she was the one.”

“It all started four and half year back. After the six months of that incident, when Yuyan just started to behave normally, one day I took her out to see new things as she used to be in home all the time. When we went to one mall, at that moment we coincidentally bumped into the boy who was trying to molest Yuyan that day.”

“When he saw us, he didn’t feel guilty at all. Instead he looked at Yuyan with devilish smile on his face and was laughing at us. I stepped forward to hit him but Yuyan held my hand as she was scared again. I had to stop as I didn’t want to scare her more. I felt helpless as I was not able to do anything to that bastard. I immediately came back to home with Yuyan. So

many times, I thought to go and kill him but for the sake of Yuyan I always stopped myself. She was my priority.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang asked, “Why he was out. Didn’t they punish him for hurting Yuyan. Lu Feng too had same thought in his mind.

Jiang Yang replied, “Power of money. What can I say more. He was a son of one rich and powerful businessman. When my father filed a case, he came out clean as his father bribed the families of other two boys to take blame on them and also promised them that he will help them to lessen the punishment. Those families agreed as punishment was not going to be long also money was the big deal for them. Yuyan was in a bad condition so we couldn’t even get her testimony too.”

Upon hearing this, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng, both frowned. Lu Qiang emptied out wine in his glass in a one go while Lu Feng didn’t feel like to drink it and put that glass back on the center table. Jiang Yang continued...

“I finally ignored everything as bringing back Yuyan to normal life was important to me. I just focused on her. That day, when she saw that boy smiling at her and she felt helpless. It triggered her greatly. Since that day, she planned to take her revenge. She liked Jackie Chan movie because of the same reason. Winning over the bad people. I thought she is a kid and enjoying those movies but I never thought, it would give her such kind of idea to take her revenge.

167 Hidden Anger...

“She planned it perfectly, no wonder she was a child with great IQ. She is a gifted child and that was one of the reason for her getting angry frequently. This time she controlled her anger for almost four and half year and took out in a scary way. She started to learn Kung Fu seriously. I never thought, there might be the reason behind it. Also, she started to go through programming and other software books and always used to do something in the laptop. I thought, as she is a brilliant kid, its normal for her to learn such things at young age. In four years, she became excellent with Kung Fu and her hidden talent with software, I only got to know after that incident”

“Through her case file in my father’s study room, she took out the details of that boy. She used her software knowledge for all these years to hack his mobile and laptop and monitored his daily life. She made fake profile on social networking site and contacted him. She chatted with him and became his friend. Once they became friends, he called her to meet him. She agreed. The day when I said, I won’t be able to take her for dinner and spend my night in hospital, she chose that day, as she knew I won’t be around her and my parents too were busy those days to come back home early.”

“First she went to the camp place, where that incident happened. She met that boy in front of that camp place as she wanted to end her revenge from where it all started. That boy picked her from that place but he couldn’t recognize her after all those years. She acted with him like a flirty girl and asked him to go somewhere in alone. That place of alley was already searched by her few days back. Whenever I was busy in my studies and classes, she used to go out secretly and search for deserted places. She even noted, when that place had no one around there and even marked all the cameras around there to hide herself from them. She recommended that boy the place she knew and he agreed too as he was thinking about something dirty in his mind.”

“When both of them reached there, that boy started to show his intentions to bring her there and for that Yuyan was ready before hand. She knew he will do something like this. That boy couldn't her intentions as he couldn't even think that such a tiny and weak girl could be any harm to him. Yuyan was confident that she would easily beat that boy as she was training hard for it and she beat so many stronger people in her Kung Fu class. After hacking that boy's social networking account and studying it for sometime, she realized, he didn't know any type of fighting skill.”

“The moment he thought, he caught a girl in his trap, Yuyan revealed her identity to him but that made him laugh and he said, ‘I will finish, what I couldn't at that day because of your looser brother.’ She was already angry but his words made her even more angry this time. She told him, why she was there with him and what she wanted to do but that boy took her lightly and laughed as thinking what this tiny girl can do to him.”

“He tried to grab her but Yuyan was not easy for him. She beat him with what she learned for all these years. She beat him very badly as he was almost half dead. She remember all the pain she got when he bit her mercilessly in that room.”

“Yuyan broke his jaw. She disfigured his devilish and laughing face which he himself would never want to see in mirror. She hurt his arms with which he touched her and made her feel disgusting. His right hand was dislocated at shoulder while other was twisted at elbow. He too had broken ribs just as Yuyan had and she hurt him at the same spots. His right leg with which he licked Yuyan multiple times when she was lying on floor helplessly and broke her ribs, is disabled for his life.”

“When I reached there, she had one metal rod, she picked from somewhere nearby. She was too angry, that she wanted to kill him. If I didn't reach there on time, she would have kill that bastard. I would be happy, if he was dead but I didn't want her to be a murderer. What she did to him was enough punishment for him. Now he won't be able to think about to hurt any girl, in his entire life.”

Lu Feng asked, “Wasn’t there any action against Yuyan?”

“Jiang Yang answered, “That guy was in a comatose condition for almost three months and Yuyan was being careful about the cameras around that place. Can you imagine, at such young age, someone to mess with the CCTV cameras. Such a fool proof planning. When she sat in his car, she was hiding her face in a hoodie in such a way that nobody could recognize her. Only that guy was the witness for himself.”

“When he woke up after months, he was traumatized. He couldn’t say anything about Yuyan as he himself was shocked and might be embarrassed to be beaten up by such a tiny girl. He was too scared, that he never dared to take her name as she make him suffer in a hell on the earth.”

“What and how she beat him to make him so traumatized I don’t know as I only got to know from her that she was angry and she beat him. In doctors report, they said that it was done by some expert martial artist who know how and where exactly to hit his pray to make him suffer with too much pain. All these things were shocking for me and my parents. Slowly this matter calmed down and with the help of my friend I started her treatment.”

“She became normal like before and there was nothing to worry about her. She attended her school regularly and always got good grades for next years. Three years passed by and she is normal.”

“I am happy that you are with her too and the thing I was worried about is getting right. She was normal and was doing everything that the girls in her age should do but still she always maintained a distance with boys. When her friends hand out out together and go on dates, she was the one who was never interested in those things. I knew she was not completely over with her past as she still gets those nightmares. Christian told me, we can’t force her to get closer to anyone, for her and not to be afraid of it. Things will happen on its own. Give her a time. One day she might meet someone who will touch her heart and get it out of the the cage.”

“Christian and me were happy to see her like this but he warned me, not to let happen anything too serious even by a mistake, that can trigger hidden anger in her. She can be too much dangerous for the one who will hurt her or the people around her.”

168 I Need To See Her...

“When I saw, she was affected by you greatly in that way, I had hope in my heart. It didn’t take much time for me to realize, how much you love her. She too started to have feelings for you so I was happy about it. The way you are considerate towards her I am thankful for that too”

When Lu Qiang heard him, “You don’t need to be. She is my love and life now.”

Jiang Yang replied, “I know, but still. You can say, when I see her happy because of you, I feel the burden on my heart is lessening. I might sound selfish, but the guilt of not being able to protect her, still gives me a pain but you being in her life is like a cure for that pain.” He looked sad.

Upon seeing, sad and guilty looking face of Jiang Yang Lu Feng said, “It was not your fault Jiang Yang so don’t blame yourself anymore. Whatever happened with her is in past now and we can’t change it. We should make her present and future better so that she won’t ever remember that incident for a single moment.”

Lu Qiang too nodded as agreeing to what Lu Feng said but he looked calm and was immersed in his thoughts. He picked up a wine glass from table which Lu Feng put back as he didn’t feel like to drink it when he heard the past. Again Lu Qiang emptied out that glass in his throat. Lu Feng was about to stop him but before he could even say a single word to stop him, Lu Qiang did what he wanted.

Jiang Yang stopped Lu Feng and said, “Let him be. He needs it.”

Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yang coldly and asked, “Why did you encourage me to go closer to her when she was suffering from the trauma from her past. You should have beat me when I first kissed her. You moron!”

Jiang Yang calmly replied, “No! Instead I would say thank you. That was the thing I was worried about most. I wanted her to have a life that the girls of her age lives or for her entire life she would have been running away from those things and would be alone forever.”

Lu Qiang said again, “Agreed! But I would have waited for her instead of being in hurry and to start it against her will.”

Jiang Yang smiled a little and said, “If it was against her will, you would have been in the hospital like that guy. Trust me, I know her better and what you did was the best thing you could do for her.”

To hear it, Lu Qiang didn't say anything. He stared at the wine bottle in front of him on the center table. As he was about to get it, this time Lu Feng took it before Lu Qiang could even touch that bottle and said, “I haven't took a sip yet, now it's mine. Don't you dare to touch it.”

Lu Qiang frowned and said, “A** hole!”

Lu Feng just smiled and replied, “Say something new.” He didn't want Lu Qiang to drink more as he already had more than enough what he could handle.

Lu Qiang got up from couch and went to window. It looked like that wine was about to hit him. His eyes looked heavy and his footsteps were not steady. Still he went to window and stood there while thinking about something.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang looked at him and they knew what he was thinking. He was thinking about his actions with Jiang Yuyan and it was clear for these both to understand.

Lu Feng walked towards the window, where Lu Qiang was standing. He put his one hand on Lu Qiang's shoulder and said, “Don't think of it in other way. She is happy with you and trust me she doesn't think of it in a way, what you are thinking right now.”

Lu Qiang sighed and said, “I don't know. I should have known everything before and now it's too late.”

Jiang Yang heard him and walked towards the window too. He looked at Lu Qiang and said, “Do you really think, I can allow

anything to happen with her and that to against her will. If it was the case, I would have killed you at the very moment. She loves you. Can't you see that?"

Lu Qiang nodded and replied, "I know that she loves me too but she never said it by herself."

"Do you want me to give you a solution to make her confess her love to you?" asked Jiang Yang.

Lu Qiang shook his head and said, "No! I want to give her time. She will do it one day I know."

Lu Feng too replied, "From what I see, I don't think you have to wait for long."

Lu Qiang didn't say anything and continued to stare outside with his heavy eyes. Jiang Yang and Lu Feng left him alone for a while. They decided not take Lu Qiang home as he was drunk. Lu Qiang didn't eat his dinner as he didn't feel like to eat anything. He was silent and was just sitting near the window while staring at nothing. After dinner, Lu Qiang finally spoke and said, "I need to go home and see her first."

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang didn't try to stop him as they knew he won't listen to anyone so Lu Feng decided to take him back home.

In Lu mansion..

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng arrived home late after dinner so it was safe for Lu Feng to take Lu Qiang to his room without being noticed by anyone. Lu Qiang was in a drunken state. He was silent and was being obedient to whatever Lu Feng was saying. As they stepped out of the car, butler Xu Dui was there outside of the mansion door for some work. He saw, Lu Feng helping Lu Qiang to walk properly by supporting him. Xu Dui understood Lu Qiang was drunk and it was the first time ever he saw Lu Qiang like this. Lu Feng looked at him but didn't say anything as not even asking for him to help carry Lu Qiang to his room. Butler understood, he should not meddle in between there, so he averted his sight from these two brothers and continued doing his work.

169 Confession...

As Lu Qiang and Lu Feng entered inside the mansion, there was no one but Lu Jinhai and Elder Lu were present. They were discussing something. They looked at Lu Qiang and Lu Feng. When Lu Feng was about to say something, these both avoided him and continued their conversation. Lu Feng gave out a sigh of relief and stepped towards the staircase to go to Lu Qiang's room.

When Lu Qiang and Lu Feng crossed the living room and went to the staircase, Elder Lu and Lu Jinhai looked at retreating back of these two. Elder Lu smiled and said while looking in their direction, "Your son is in love."

Lu Jinhai replied while looking in the same direction as Elder Lu, "Indeed! and I am pleased to see him like this."

Elder Lu laughed and asked, "Pleased to see him in love or in drunken condition?"

Lu Jinhai replied with a little laugh too, "Haha! Both."

Meanwhile, Lu Qiang and Lu Feng reached the first floor. As Lu Feng was about to take him to the second floor, Lu Qiang spoke, "I can go from here. You go back to your room."

Lu Feng was still walking, by supporting Lu Qiang to walk properly. He was tired and replied, "No way. I am too tired to take you to the hospital if you slipped on these stairs and break your bones. So shut your mouth and let me take you to your floor."

Lu Qiang didn't say anything and obeyed to what Lu Feng said. As they reach the second floor, Lu Qiang again said, "From here, I can walk to my room. You can go now."

Lu Feng replied in a tired voice while carrying Lu Qiang along with him, "Yeah! I know you can walk and I can see you are quite sober. I think, you are getting a little better with alcohol now or is it because of the eagerness to see your woman?"

Lu Qiang replied, "Shut up and go back to your room."

Lu Feng didn't listen. He dragged Lu Qiang further ahead and stopped in front of one door. Lu Qiang looked at the door and then looked at Lu Feng because it was Jiang Yuyan's room. Lu Feng looked at Lu Qiang's eyes which were looking at him in surprise and said, "What? Isn't it where you wanted to go?"

Lu Qiang didn't replied to him and moved his sight to the door and kept staring at it. Lu Feng held Lu Qiang's face in both palms and made him look into his eyes and then said, "Don't feel bad about anything. I know Lu Qiang, who can never ever hurt anyone even in his dreams and he is the best man for any girl to have him, in her life. Trust me she is very happy with you, I can see that."

Lu Qiang was just staring at Lu Feng while listening to what he was saying. Once Lu Feng finished his part, Lu Qiang was about to say something but suddenly the door opened. Both looked at the door. Jiang Yuyan was standing there and was looking at them. She heard the voices from another side of the door which made her check it. Lu Feng let go of Lu Qiang's face and said while looking at Jiang Yuyan, "Take care of him. He is now your responsibility." Just he moved two steps to leave that place, he stopped and said, "Lu Qiang didn't eat anything since lunch, I will send something here. Just make sure he will eat it." Jiang Yuyan nodded and Lu Feng left.

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Qiang who was standing with the support of the wall beside the door. She observed his face and understood he was drunk. As she stepped towards him, Lu Qiang hugged her by putting all his weight on her thin shoulders as he was not able to stand properly. Jiang Yuyan held him properly by circling her hands around him and said, "Let's go inside."

Jiang Yuyan took him inside and closed the door. She decided to take him to the bed so that he can lie down comfortably but Lu Qiang stopped her. She looked at him with puzzled expressions. Lu Qiang held her one hand in his and with another hand, he caressed her cheek and said while looking into her bright eyes with his heavy ones, "I am sorry if I have ever hurt you."

Jiang Yuyan looked in his eyes with all the love she felt for him and said, “Why are you saying this? You have never hurt me.”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “I am glad to hear it but still I am sorry.”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “You don’t need to. Stop saying it.”

Lu Qiang looked sad and full of guilt. Tears started to roll down from his eyes. He hugged her again and said, “If I had known earlier what happened to you in the past, I wouldn’t have forced myself on you. I would have waited more until you were ready. I am really sorry Yuyan.”

Jiang Yuyan felt bad to hear it as what Lu Qiang was thinking was not true. He never forced himself on her as she liked it too and allowed him to do that. She felt the same way what Lu Qiang Felt for her. She let him be for a while. When he let go of her, Jiang Yuyan, held his face in her palms to make him look into her eyes and said, “You never forced yourself on me. I too wanted it as much as you did and you know why?” She asked it and stopped.

Lu Qiang continued staring in her eyes to search the answer of her ‘Why’.

Jiang Yuyan replied while looking back into his curious eyes, “Because I love you too.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang shook his head to clear his drunken state mind and asked, “W-what did you say?”

Jiang Yuyan replied again, “I said, I love you Lu Qiang.”

170 Playful Jiang Yuyan!!

As Jiang Yuyan again repeated those three words again, Lu Qiang just stood steady and didn't react at all. He didn't know how to react at that moment. He was drunk but still could understand what was going on. He was waiting for her confession for so long but when she did, he was speechless. He felt like, he was in a dream. He should be happy and jumping with happiness but instead, he was in a shock.

Jiang Yuyan wiped tears from his eyes and asked to see his expressionless face, "Why are you silent? Say something."

Lu Qiang replied, "I-I don't know what to say. My brain is not working I guess and I don't know what to do even."

Jiang Yuyan smiled pleasantly and said, "You should do this." she said it and straight away kissed Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang was shocked again and his body stiffened when her lips touched his.

It was the first time Jiang Yuyan was acting playfully with Lu Qiang, just as he behaved with her all the time and he felt surprised to see this new side of hers. Lu Qiang collected himself and kissed her back. After a while, they parted away and both smiled to look at each other. Lu Qiang was out of his shock and realized it was not a dream. he looked into her bright starry eyes with a pleasant smile on his face and said, "Thank you Yuyan."

Jiang Yuyan stopped him and said, "No! Actually, I am thankful to you for so many things. Thank you for being part of my life. Thank you for waiting for me all these years and fulfilling the promise you made in our childhood. Also, thank you for being patient with me for all these days and understanding me more than myself. Thank you for...."

As Jiang Yuyan was talking without a stop, Lu Qiang stopped her by kissing her again. He parted away and said, "You talk too much."

Jiang Yuyan smiled and said, "If you are going to stop me like this all the time, I will always try to talk more and more."

Lu Qiang smiled and said, "Let me get my hangover down then I will show you different ways to stop you from talking."

Jiang Yuyan realized that he was drunk and need to get rid of his hangover. She held his hand and pulled him towards the bathroom and Lu Qiang was following her without any question.

Once they entered the bathroom, Jiang Yuyan asked him to remove his clothes. Lu Qiang smiled teasingly and asked, "Are you planning to take advantage of my drunken condition?" and stood there not wanting to do any effort to remove his clothes.

Jiang Yuyan replied while unbuttoning his shirt, "The way you are able to understand the situation and my intentions clear, I don't think you are drunk."

Lu Qiang smiled mischievously and said, "If you treat me like this always, I won't mind act drunk all the time."

Jiang Yuyan removed Lu Qiang's shirt and said, "For that, you don't need to be drunk. I will always be like this."

"Really?" He asked.

Jiang Yuyan nodded as saying, "Hmm!" She turned on the shower and moved aside to let him stand under cold water to help him get over with his hangover. Lu Qiang pulled her inside the shower and hugged her. Jiang Yuyan annoyingly said, "I just had a shower and now again you are making me have it again."

Lu Qiang replied, "Did you forget, I am drunk and can't stand properly. I need support. What if I fell down?" he said and kissed her on her shoulders lightly while hugging her.

Jiang Yuyan laughed a little and said, "But your intentions seem different."

Lu Qiang let go of her, looked into her eyes and said, "You are right" and kissed her again on her lips. He started to suck and nibble her lips and with each passing moment it was getting intense." He pushed Jiang Yuyan against the wall and tugged

her hands above her head with his one hand and his other hand was working his way inside her top and was moving on her lower back. She wanted to say stop as they could do it later once Lu Qiang feels better but Lu Qiang sealed her lips again with his and kissed her with all his might.

Jiang Yuyan was stuck between the wall and him. As her hands were pinned above her head and her lips were sealed, she was not able to move a bit or to say anything. Lu Qiang was having his way with her. After assaulting her lips he made his way into her mouth by sliding his tongue inside and was tasting her sweetness as much as he wanted.

Soon she felt breathless and Lu Qiang let go of her lips but he didn't let go of her hands. Once she breathed enough. Lu Qiang kissed her again and slid his tongue inside her mouth. She was already tired and was saying no more by trying to hide her tongue.

Lu Qiang parted and looked at her with intense sight and said, "I want it, so be there."

He said it and again kissed her again. This time Jiang Yuyan was out of energy and finally gave up. She let him taste her as much as he wanted but he was not stopping and was getting more intense. She thought it was because of the effect of alcohol on him. After a while, he let go of her lips while panting heavily. Also, He let go of her hands. She was tired and stood with the support of the wall. Lu Qiang stepped back and stood under the cold shower to calm himself down.

He was aware that if he continued doing that, he might do something that he didn't want to. He closed his eyes and stood for a while just like that under the shower. He didn't look at Jiang Yuyan as he knew, he would definitely go back to her as he was not in the right state of his mind.

This author have one request. Its for the readers who buy SS to unlock chapters. When you read my novel, please use Premium that means the SS you buy to unlock chapters. that SS will help me earn few bucks.. Frees SS don't help me earn

anything... The readers who don't buy SS to read, no need to feel bad.. It's okay because I love all you guys... XOXO

171 Don't Try To Tempt Me...

Jiang Yuyan was looking at him standing under the shower and she knew, he was trying to stop himself so she didn't go to him although she thought otherwise. She wanted to go to him, hug him and allow him to do what he wanted but she didn't want it to happen when he was under the influence of alcohol. She was aware, being with him and crossing all limits would be the best moments of their lives so she too wanted it to happen at the right moment and not like this suddenly at random instance.

While Lu Qiang was trying hard to calm himself down, Jiang Yuyan removed her wet clothes, covered herself in a towel and left the bathroom. Lu Qiang didn't look at her as he was afraid of his own desires. When Jiang Yuyan left the bathroom and he heard the sound of the door closing and finally opened his eyes.

Lu Qiang ran his hands through his hair, inhaled deeply and exhaled through his mouth, a sigh of relief as he felt like passing the difficult thing. After spending some more time in the shower, he stepped out of it, removed his remaining clothes and went out of the bathroom with a towel wrapped around his waist.

Jiang Yuyan was ready in her clothes while waiting for Lu Qiang with pair of night clothes in her hands that were for him. Lu Qiang went to her to take his clothes from her. As he reached near her, he saw, her lips were swollen and her lower lip was hurt a little.

Lu Qiang caressed her lips with his thumb lightly and asked, "Does it hurt?"

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said teasingly, "Not at all. I can go for even more."

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and said, “Stop being bold or you won’t be able to handle me.”

Jiang Yuyan stepped towards him almost touching to his body. Her face was just an inch apart from his. She asked teasingly while staring in his eyes, “What will you do?”

Lu Qiang stepped back in a surprise and took his clothes from her hands. “You.....Don’t try to tempt me or you might regret it.”

Jiang Yuyan again stepped towards him as resuming the same inch apart distance with him and said, “Why not let me regret it then. I won’t stop tempting you. As I learned it from you, I will use it on you. Time to get a taste of your own medicine. Do you know how I felt, whenever you tried to tempt me.”

Lu Qiang stepped back again in a surprise to see the bold side of his woman and said, “Let me wear my clothes first.”

Jiang Yuyan smiled mischievously, again went closer to him. She circled her hands around his neck and whispered in his ear, “What’s the need, as it’s going to get off soon.”

Jiang Yuyan was using Lu Qiang’s words on him back again. She didn’t look nervous at all. She was standing there with confidence in her eyes with fearless expressions, opposite to how she behaved all the time. It was the effect of the trust she had in Lu Qiang. She knew he won’t do anything to her even if she tries to tempt him. She was just trying to have fun with him and her main intention was to get him out of the guilt that he was feeling earlier.

Lu Qiang gulped and stood frozen. Jiang Yuyan looked at his flushed face and found it adorable. The person who always acted boldly and never left any chance to tease or get closer to her was looking nervous in front of her sudden bold attitude. Jiang Yuyan let go of him and stepped back but continued staring at him from head to toe like a perverted person.

Lu Qiang immediately put on his T-shirt and was ready to wear his undergarment and his pajamas. Lu Qiang stopped and said, “Turn around. I have to wear these” and showed her clothes in his hands. Jiang Yuyan was stubborn and said,

“Whatever you are trying to hide, I have seen it already, so feel free to change your clothes in front of me.”

Lu Qiang knew, she was just pulling his leg and didn't mean it. He sighed, pinched place between his eyebrows and said, “Okay! As you wish.” Just as Lu Qiang started to unwrap the towel around his waist, Jiang Yuyan turned around to look in another direction. Lu Qiang smiled to look at her and finally changed his clothes.

Once he was done changing his clothes, he stepped towards Jiang YuYan who was standing there while facing her back to him. Lu Qiang went closer and hugged her from the back and said, “Someone was trying to get naughty earlier.”

Jiang Yuyan asked, “Who? I didn't see anyone like that here.”

Lu Qiang turned her around and said, “But I can see that someone and I am going to fulfill that person's wish. Just as Lu Qiang moved closer to her lips, there was a knock on the door. Lu Qiang stopped to here it and Jiang Yuyan went to open the door. As she opened the door, she saw, butler Xu Dui was standing in front of her with a tray in his hands having food covered in a dish.

As Xu Dui saw Jiang Yuyan, he said, “Young master Lu Feng asked me to bring this to your room. Jiang Yuyan understood, it was Lu Feng. she received tray from butler and said, “Thank you.” As Butler was about to say welcome to Jiang Yuyan, he saw, Lu Qiang was standing inside the room far behind Jiang Yuyan. He looked at Lu Qiang, bowed his head and left.”

Jiang Yuyan closed the door and kept that tray on the two-seater coffee table in her room. She looked little off with thoughts in mind. Lu Qiang went towards the coffee table and asked, “What happened?”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Uncle Xu Dui saw you in my room and at this late hour.”

172 Argument...

Lu Qiang smiled to see her panicked and embarrassed face and said, “You don’t need to be worried about him. He is the storage box of all the secrets in this family. He is always aware of what is going inside of this mansion. He must be already expecting me to be in your room. Also, what do you think? Is Lu Feng an idiot to send him here?”

Jiang Yuyan replied, “Still it’s too embarrassing for me. What if other family members will get to know about us.”

“So what if they know and do you really think, my family members don’t know about us? Trust me, they know everything.”

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan’s face suddenly lost its color and she asked in a shock, “W-what? I mean how do they know? Did you tell them?”

Lu Qiang smiled and said, “I don’t need to tell them anything. They are smart people.”

Jiang Yuyan felt tensed to hear it and said, “No way! What they might be thinking about me?”

Lu Qiang again laughed to see her panicked face and said, “They must be feeling thankful towards you as finally, they will get to see, Lu Qiang’s wife coming to this mansion.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t know what to say. She had so many thoughts in her mind as it was all so sudden for her. Lu Qiang held her hand and said, “don’t think much. They already know, I like you and they too would like to see you as my wife.”

Jiang Yuyan listened to what he said and replied, “If it is like that then it’s too awkward for me to face them. They might know you sleep in my room every night and.....” Jiang Yuyan was utterly embarrassed to think about it.

Lu Qiang said, “That might be the case. Grandpa was the one to give you this room so that we can get closer to each other.”

Jiang Yuyan was shocked again to hear it and said, “Grandpa? I mean grandpa knows about us?”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “He was the first one to know about it other than Lu Feng. Grandpa knows us well. He can see what we are thinking in just a single glance.”

Jiang Yuyan murmured to herself, “How I am going to face them tomorrow?”

As Lu Qiang heard it and was about to say something, Jiang Yuyan spoke, “From today you are not allowed in my room in the night.”

Lu Qiang exclaimed, “What?”

“Yes! You are going to sleep in your room from now on,” she said while serving food for Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang frowned and said, “Not going to happen.”

Jiang Yuyan wanted to argue with him on this to convince him but she stopped as she realized, she has to make him eat first and if they continued like this he won’t eat anything so she finally gave up and said, “First, let’s eat something.”

Lu Qiang replied, “I am not hungry.”

“You have to eat something or I will get out of this room and will sleep somewhere else.” she frowned. Lu Qiang obediently sat in a chair and started to eat the food served by Jiang Yuyan in a dish. He asked her to join him too but she denied as she was full. Still, Lu Qiang made her eat with him.

Once they finish eating, cleaning the table and brushing their teeth, they argued for a while more. What Jiang Yuyan was feeling embarrassed about was not the matter of embarrassment for Lu Qiang as he understood only one thing and that was he loved her and it didn’t matter to him, what others think about both of them but as a woman, Jiang Yuyan thought in a different way. She was staying in someone else’s home and it was obvious for her to feel awkward about the things between them known by other family members when she was not even married to Lu Qiang. An argument between them moved to nowhere as both were being stubborn.

Jiang Yuyan climbed into her bed and slept in the center instead of on one side of the bed. She covered herself with the quilt and said, "I am sleeping. Please switch off all the lights before you leave the room" and closed her eyes.

Lu Qiang looked at her with a questioning look with his one eyebrow curved upward. He turned off all the lights in the room and went to the bed to sleep beside her. Jiang Yuyan turned to face her back to him and said, "Go back to your room."

"I told you, you don't have to think about them. They are fine with us being together. Just think about both of us." said Lu Qiang

"Still no. we are not married yet, so it doesn't feel good when they know about us sleeping in the same bed every night," replied Jiang Yuyan.

"Just sometime before you confessed your love to me and now you want me to stay away from you. This is not fair."

"I don't remember when I said that. It must be your imagination as you were drunk." Jiang Yuyan didn't realize what she just said can create trouble for her.

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang felt frustrated and said, "This is not the way to solve the problem. We can..."

"I don't want to listen to anything. You won't understand how embarrassing it is for me. From now on you have to sleep in your room, that's it." She spoke without giving him a chance to say what he wanted.

"So being with me is embarrassing for you. Okay! As you wish." Lu Qiang turned around, stepped towards the door and went out of the room with quite a loud sound of the door closing. As Jiang Yuyan heard it, she turned to look back and saw, Lu Qiang left.

She sat up in a bed and felt a little bad as she had to use harsh words but she thought it was the only way. She wanted to say, that being with him was not embarrassing but was something she liked most and he was taking her words in a wrong way but Lu Qiang left before she could realize and say it. She was

worried to think about what others might be thinking about her character.

173 Fun With Yuyan...

The next morning, Jiang Yuyan woke up. She got ready and went downstairs for breakfast. In the living room, she talked to everyone and others did the same while Lu Qiang only nodded to her 'Good Morning' with slight smile on his lips and continued his talk with Lu Lijun. On the breakfast table, all sat on their seats, with Jiang Yuyan on the right side of Lu Qiang. Jiang Yuyan could sense that there was a change in Lu Qiang's behavior with her which others could not notice but she could. Lu Qiang, as usual, filled her dish with food whenever he saw it empty and behaved normally.

After breakfast when it was time for Jiang Yuyan and Lu Lijun to go to schools, they came out of the mansion with Lu Qiang. Lu Qiang called Lu Feng out a while ago so he was there too. He looked at Lu Feng and said, "Today, you have to drop Yuyan and Lu Lijun to schools. I have something important to do in the office."

Lu Feng realized there was something off between these two so he obeyed to what Lu Qiang said. Lu Qiang finished his part and walked towards his car. The driver greeted and opened the door of the car for him. Just as Lu Qiang was about to step inside of the car, he called Lu Feng again and said, "Make sure to drop her inside the campus and check if she reach to her class without being interrupted by anyone. There are wolves around."

Lu Feng smiled at what Lu Qiang said and replied, "Don't worry, I know how to hunt them down," Lu Qiang sat inside the car and left.

Jiang Yuyan was upset to see this. She rooted to her place while looking at Lu Qiang's car until it disappears from her site. She was aware that, Lu Qiang was behaving like this because of the incident from last night. Since they met in the morning, he didn't talk to her or didn't even look at her properly. He was just being formal with her just like he was with others.

Lu Feng realized she was sad but at that moment he couldn't do anything as whatever it was, that was between her and Lu Qiang. He let her be like that for a moment but suddenly Lu Lijun spoke, "Let's get in the car. I am getting late for school." He said it and sat in the back passenger seat.

Upon hearing it, Lu Feng too sat on the driver seat and asked Jiang Yuyan to sit inside the car.

With sad expressions on her face, she sat inside the car on front passenger seat as Lu Lijun already sat in the back passenger seat. Lu Feng started the car and drove towards the school.

On the way, Lu Feng couldn't stop himself from asking her what happened as she looked really sad, "Why are u upset?"

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and was about to say, it was nothing just then a voice interrupted her. "What can it be brother Lu Feng? The annoying quarrel between lovers." It was from Lu Lijun.

Lu Feng looked at Lu Lijun through rear view mirror and smiled to which Lu Lijun smiled too as both were up to something. Jiang Yuyan didn't say anything and just continued staring outside of the window. Lu Feng asked again, "Did that moron troubled you? Tell me. Me and Jiang Yang will make him walk on needles."

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, "No. It's nothing."

Upon hearing it, Lu Lijun said, "Girls are so annoying." This made Jiang Yuyan angry as she was already upset and she replied, "No, your brother is annoying not me."

"Elder brother is not like that. He is the best," replied Lu Lijun to which Lu Feng agreed too.

Jiang Yuyan frowned to see this and said, "Hmm! He is like that trust me. He doesn't want to understand anything. He never listens to what I said and thinks only he knows what is right. I am upset with him too but he is full of himself." She said it all in one breath and stopped to breathe again

"Is that so." Both Lu Feng and Lu Lijun spoke at the same time with a ghost smiles on their faces. They were enjoying to

see, the first time someone was talking bad about Lu Qiang and they found it as cute. They wanted her to continue as much as she could.

Too here both of them, she replied immediately in a reflex, “Yes! And he doesn’t even want to understand what I am feeling. That stubborn president of Lu corporation.”

Lu Feng and Lu Lijun were trying to control their laughter. Finally, Lu Feng said, “Ohh! So you are upset because of our brother, we were right.” Lu Feng and Lu Lijun again looked at each other through rear view mirror and smiled.

When she heard this ‘we’ she looked at Lu Feng who had a light smile on his face while his attention was on driving and then she turned to look at Lu Lijun who had a smile on his face too and was staring outside of the window. She understood these both were playing around with her. She frowned and said, “Not both of you too.”

Lu Feng and Lu Lijun laughed and said, “Sorry!” and didn’t bother her more. Lu Feng first dropped Lu Lijun to his school and then moved to Jiang Yuyan’s destination.

On the way, Lu Feng finally decided to ask what happened between her and Lu Qiang as he thought of himself as her friend and he promised her once to help her if she was in any kind of trouble. “Why did both of u fight?”

Jiang Yuyan hesitated for a while but she knew she could share everything with Lu Feng so she replied “Last night, uncle Xu Dui saw Lu Qiang in my room and I felt embarrassed and thought what he might be thinking about me. I was upset.”

Lu Feng replied, “Well I can understand you but you don’t have to be careful around him. He knows everything about everyone in our home and he will never leak it out.”

174 Toxic Words..

“Lu Qiang said the same thing but still it’s all awkward for me and when he said, that other family members know about it too then I couldn’t take it and...” She stopped suddenly as feeling bad about what she did.

“You asked him not to sleep in your room anymore and he is upset. Right?” Lu Feng said what she wanted to say.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Yes!”

Lu Feng smiled and said, “That was the normal and obvious reaction from your side so don’t feel bad but what Lu Qiang is behaving is a normal reaction from his side too.”

Jiang Yuyan agreed and said, “Might be but he should understand what and why I did that.”

“I know you are right in your place and I am not saying Lu Qiang is right but the reason for me to think about his side too is not wrong. You don’t know but after so many years, these are the days when I am seeing him happy and it is just because of your presence in his life. Since a very young age, he is just working and working to give others a comfortable life but he never ever thought about his dreams or what he wants in life.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Feng with surprised expressions on her face to hear what he said. She had an idea about it but the way Lu Feng was saying it, she thought it was really sad on Lu Qiang’s part.

Lu Feng continued while his focus on driving. “First time in his life he wants something that can be only for him, the first time in his life he is being greedy and seeking happiness. This something can make up for all his sacrifices and everything he did for others while keeping his own needs aside and that something is you Yuyan.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t know what to say. Upon hearing it she felt even sadder. She knew Lu Qiang worked hard all these years

and sacrificed a lot but hearing it from Lu Feng, made her feel sadder.

Lu Feng realized she is feeling bad now so he said, “I am not saying this to make you feel bad. I am just saying this to tell you about his side and why he is being like this. All those years he waited for you and now you are here, he doesn’t want to part away from you even for a second and that is understandable.”

Lu Feng paused for a while and spoke again, “The thing that is concerning you right now, is not wrong in his opinion because he only knows one thing and that is he loves you and wants to be with you, whatever it takes.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and replied, “I am getting what you are trying to say and I am not going to stay away from him too but I just don’t want to do anything because of which I have to feel embarrassed in front of all family members. It doesn’t feel good as we are not married yet.”

Lu Feng replied, “Yes I know. Give him some time to understand it. Right now he is blinded by the love for you.”

“Yup! I will.” She replied.

Just then they arrived at the university gate. Lu Feng parked his car and both stepped out. Lu Feng went with her to the gate and was about to say bye, he heard a voice.

“So today another bodyguard is here to protect Jiang Yuyan.”

Lu Feng and Jiang Yuyan turned to look at it and saw it was Ming Rusheng who came to drop his sister Ming Lan. Ming Lan smiled with a little nod to see Lu Feng. Though they never talked, they knew each other by faces. Lu Feng too replied to her smile with a little nod.

As Ming siblings reached near to them, Lu Feng replied to what Ming Rusheng said, “What can we do as there are wolves around and need to protect her from them.”

Ming Rusheng smiled and said, “Really? So dogs are going to hunt wolves now?”

Lu Feng replied, “Well, you never know, that can be a lion under the skin of a dog.”

“Or scared cat might be,” Ming Rusheng replied,

“That time will show.” Lu Feng was replying calmly to what Ming Rusheng was saying.

“I Will wait for that day then,” said Ming Rusheng

What these two were talking about didn't feel good to two ladies standing there. Suddenly Ming Lan said, “We are getting late Jiang Yuyan, we should go.” Jiang Yuyan looked at Lu Feng and said, “I will go now, you should go too.” She looked at Ming Rusheng and smiled for the sake of formality.

Jiang Yuyan was aware of the cold war between two families and she didn't want these two to continue their toxic talk any more. Last she witnessed it was Lu Qiang and Ming Rusheng and now it was with Lu Feng.

Lu Feng nodded to and said Jiang Yuyan, “First you go inside then I will leave.”

Both Ming Lan and Jiang Yuyan went inside the gate while these two men were standing outside of the gate. Ming Rusheng spoke, “Where is president Lu? I was expecting to see him here.”

Lu Feng replied, “He is a president, have lots of works to do and not anymore free like us.”

Ming Rusheng replied, “I wonder why you are free here? You should be sitting on that chair where Lu Qiang is sitting now.”

Upon hearing it, a calm expression on Lu Feng's face changed and he looked at Ming Rusheng with a killer gaze and said, “Everyone gets what they deserve and trust me both of us deserves to be free only.”

Ming Rusheng laughed and said, “Well not me. I am going to be too much busy soon.”

“With the things prepared by your father already. it's worth only if you earned it on your own.” Lu Feng's reply made Ming Rusheng feel salty and he said, “Lu Qiang too climbed

on the ladder prepared by his father. You should have said this to him too.”

Lu Feng replied with respect for Lu Qiang in his heart, “Not really. He fixed the badly broken ladder first then climbed onto it, unlike you.”

Ming Rusheng laughed and said, “Ohh! too much love for a brother. I am afraid, one day this love might convert into something else.”

Lu Feng replied calmly to Ming Rusheng’s stingy words, “Daydreaming is not a good thing Ming Rusheng.”

Ming Rusheng smiled mischievously and asked, “Are you planning to be a loyal dog for whole life and guard the ladder?”

“Nope! I am planning to be the one to hold that ladder tightly to not let him fall down,” replied Lu Feng

Ming Rusheng sighed and said, “Hmm what can I say now?”

“You better shut your mouth. Hope not to see you ever again,” Lu Feng said it and stepped towards his car.

Ming Rusheng called him again, “Lu Feng! In the future, if you need any help, I am always there.”

Lu Feng replied, “Yeah, I will be needing someone to break your toxic mouth.” Lu Feng said and sat inside his car and left. Ming Rusheng had a mischievous smile on his face. He looked back to the university gate and saw Jiang Yuyan was nowhere to be seen. He sat in his car and left too.

175 New Friend...

Jiang Yuyan and Ming Lan went inside the campus. As it was time for their classes, both said bye to each other and went to their respective classes. It has been a week since Jiang Yuyan was attending the classes but she didn't have any friends yet. She talked to a few students but it was just formal chat. There was a girl in her class who caught her attention since the first day of class but she never had a chance to talk to her. Just like Jiang Yuyan she too didn't talk to anyone and used to be busy in her mobile with headphones on, once they finish the class.

After, going through two lengthy classes of Finance and Marketing, It was a lunchtime. Everyone in the class left for the cafeteria while these two were still in the class. Jiang Yuyan didn't feel like to eat anything as she was still upset with her fight with Lu Qiang, so she stayed back while resting her head on the study table and closed her eyes. She was thinking about Lu Qiang what he might be doing. She was missing him and wanted to talk to him but couldn't muster up courage. As she was immersed in her thoughts, she heard a voice.

“Are you not going for lunch?”

Jiang Yuyan lifted her head and looked in the direction of the voice. It was that girl. She was wearing dark blue jeans and a light green color top. She was smiling to look at Jiang Yuyan which startled her. All the time that girl had a cold expression on her face but now she was smiling and was looking too pretty to move one's sight away from her face. Her bright eyes with thick, dark and beautiful eyebrows, tiny nose, jelly like lips, round face, rosy pink skin, made her look eye-catching. With those cold expressions too, she always looked attractive but with a smile on her face, she looked way too pretty.

That girl put her cellphone and headphones aside and was sitting in her place while looking at Jiang Yuyan. First, Jiang Yuyan looked here and there to check if that girl was talking to someone else but there was no one other than those two. Jiang

Yuyan felt surprised to see, that girl was actually talking to her who never even bothered to smile back.

Jiang Yuyan replied, "I am not hungry."

That girl spoke again, "Even if you fought with your boyfriend, you should not let your tummy suffered."

Upon hearing it Jiang Yuyan sat straight in her seat and said, "Why are you not eating then, did you fight with your boyfriend too."

That girl replied, "Well I don't have any intention to tie myself to the leash."

Jiang Yuyan looked straight in her eyes and said with a firm voice, "For that, you should avoid being with pet lovers."

That girls smile and said, "Finally there is someone here who has a brain." she said it and introduced herself, "By the way my name is Nixxxie." and offered her hand to shake it with Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan accepted it and said, "Nick Xie?"

She replied, "Well you got my real name right but just call me Nixxxie with triple X in between." She picked up Jiang Yuyan's diary and pen from the table and wrote on it "NIXXXIE".

Jiang Yuyan saw it and said, "I never heard such name before."

"Well, you won't ever see a girl like me even. This is my gaming tag and I like to use it everywhere now. Isn't it cool, Jiang Yuyan?" She replied with a smile on her lips while straight staring in Jiang Yuyan's eyes which surprised Jiang Yuyan again. That girl knew her name too which made Jiang Yuyan think, 'One more strange and mysterious person around me.'

Upon seeing Jiang Yuyan's puzzled face she said, "Don't be surprised, let's go for lunch."

Jiang Yuyan didn't ask her anything and both went to the cafeteria for lunch. Other students from their class were surprised to see these both together too. Jiang Yuyan and

Nixxxie had lunch silently without much talk. Both didn't know much about each other but there was a level of comfort between them.

Lu Corporation Head Office..

After coming to the office, Lu Qiang was just working like a crazy workaholic person. Continuous meetings presentation all the time. It was a day for all the employees when they were not allowed to even breath properly. All were working their butts off.

In Lunchtime when assistant Xiao Min brought lunch for Lu Qiang, he didn't even look at it. Finally, Xiao Min had to ask him, "Boss, lunch is getting cold."

Lu Qiang was going through his documents and replied in a cold voice without even looking at Xiao Min, "You can have it."

Xiao Min understood, today his boss was not in a nice mood. He preferred to keep silent. When he came out of Lu Qiang's cabin, the employees which were present outside were expecting to hear some good words but Xiao Min shook his head as saying, 'Still the same.' which made those employees shiver in fear.

The whole day continued like this. Everyone had suffered the wrath of Lu Qiang. During the meeting, everyone got scolded. The files of their work either end up in a trash bin or end up having dozens of corrections to be done. There was nothing, in which Lu Qiang couldn't find a fault. All were scared of him as they were seeing him like this after a long time but this time it was worse and all were in the same thought that what might have happened to make his like this.

Jiang Yuyan finished all her classes and she was ready to go back home. She was waiting for Lu Feng to come to take her home. Ming Lan too was waiting for her brother. This time instead of Lu Feng, Jiang Yang came to receive her. Jiang Yuyan was surprised to see her brother there. She didn't expect to see him. When she came out of her surprised mode, she stepped towards her brother and hugged him. Jiang Yang hugged her back and asked, "Were you missing me?"

176 Knowing The Devil...

Jiang Yuyan answered while not letting go of her brother, “Yes! I missed you a lot brother. Thank you so much for showing up here.”

Jiang Yang smiled and replied while patting her back, “Anything for you dear.”

Ming Lan too greeted him with a smile, just then Nixxie was passing by from there to get into her car. She halted in her track just to see Jiang Yuyan who was with one man and she was hugging him tightly. Nixxie stepped in Jiang Yuyan’s direction and said while looking at her, “So, this person is the reason for your loss of appetite.” She then turned her sight from Jiang Yuyan to Jiang Yang and said while observing him from head to toe, “Well, not worth it.”

Upon hearing it, both siblings were shocked. Jiang Yuyan realized what Nixxie was talking about and said, “No, you are getting it....”

“No need to explain, just one suggestion. Change your taste.” She didn’t give Jiang Yuyan a chance to tell her that, he was her brother.

Jiang Yang was stunned to see her straightforward attitude. He was one handsome man and girls could drool over just to see him but Nixxie didn’t bat an eye for him, instead, she found him worthless. Jiang Yang looked at retreating back of Nixxie and said, “Strange girl.”

Jiang Yuyan too replied while looking at her and in the same direction as her brother, “Hmm! A little might be.”

Jiang Yang was still looking at that girl and said, “But being strange seems interesting.” and smiled.

Just then Ming Rusheng arrived in his car to receive his sister. He stepped out of the car, greeted Jiang Yang and said, “Good to see at least one sensible man around your sister.”

Jiang Yang greeted him back with a smile and said, “Well, everyone around my sister is sensible because she can’t stand to idiots.”

Ming Rusheng replied, “I hope so, it is like that.”

“Hmm! I know my sister well,” replied Jiang Yang.

Ming Rusheng just smiled to hear it and didn’t extend this talk much as Jiang Yang was not among Lus. After that, they said bye and all went in their own way. On the way to Ming Mansion, in a car, Ming Lan asked her brother, “If you hate Lus that much then why do you come here to drop me. I can come with a driver in another car.”

“There are other interesting people too.” Ming Rusheng replied with a ghost smile on his face while his attention on the road.”

Ming Lan noticed the smile on his face and said, “Is Jiang Yuyan among those interesting people?” she didn’t ask him directly, that if he was coming there every day just to see Jiang Yuyan as she knew her brother won’t answer her.

Ming Rusheng replied, “Well, might be.” Ming Lan already knew what was in her brother’s heart. She too just smiled to hear his answer and didn’t ask anything further.

In Jiang Yang’s car...

“How have you been? Is my friend troubling you?” Jiang Yang asked to look at the road.

Jiang Yuyan sighed and replied, “I am sure, you already know about everything. Why bother to ask then?”

Jiang Yang smiled to hear it and asked, “So what are you going to do now?”

“I don’t know brother. He didn’t even talk to me properly in the morning, so how can I make him understand the things,” She replied as feeling helpless.

“Hmmm! As much as I know him, he must be in his devil form right now. Give him some time.”

“Devil form?” She was curious to hear it.

Jiang Yang replied, “Well, he is not all that good like he is always with you. He is a devil when something upsets him and now he is upset.”

“Really? How do you know him so well?” she asked again being curious.

“Don’t know but you can say, it is just being a true friend.” Jiang Yang said it and took a different turn on a road instead of the one which went towards Lu Mansion. Upon seeing it, Jiang Yuyan asked, “Where are we going?”

“Surprise!” Jiang Yang didn’t say anything further and focused on his driving.

In some time, they reached Lu corporation’s head office. It was the first time when Jiang Yuyan was visiting it. She was mesmerized to see this huge corporate place. She was observing it carefully, just then Jiang Yang spoke, “In future, you might have to come here often so brace yourself.”

“You know that I don’t have any interest in the business field so not a chance that I will come here again.” she replied.

“You never know,” He said as both entered the reception area of the building. Receptionists were already aware of Jiang Yang’s friendship with Lu Qiang and also he was one of the most important people for their boss. Though the whole office was in chaos because of devil Lu Qiang, receptionists allowed them to go to Lu Qiang’s office. Both entered into the elevator, just then they heard the whining of few employees who were in an elevator with them

“I think, today only my dead body can leave this office. So much work since morning without even getting a chance to breathe properly,” said one middle age man to the other one who looked younger to him.

Another man agreed and said, “I didn’t even felt like to have my lunch after president Lu threw the project file made by me in trash. I was too scared to see him.”

“You are not the only one. Everyone here is going through the same torture. Also. President Lu didn’t have lunch either. He is

just working like a machine as he wants to finish the work for the whole month in a single day.

Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yang both were listening to the conversation between these two men. Jiang Yuyan looked at her brother with a questioning look as she knew, these men were talking about Lu Qiang. Jiang Yuyan nodded with a smile on his face as saying, 'It's true'.

177 Cure For The Anger...

Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yang both reached the floor of Lu Qiang's office on the twentieth floor. Receptionists on that floor too were familiar with Jiang Yang but it was the first time when they saw Jiang Yuyan and wondered who this pretty girl was. As Lu Qiang was in his devil mode, Receptionist didn't dare to call in his office to inform him directly about Jiang Yang what they usually do. They asked both siblings to wait in the waiting area and informed assistant Xiao Min about it.

When Xiao Min heard it, he felt relieved as he knew, these two can calm down his boss. He immediately came to the waiting area, greeted them and asked them to follow him to Lu Qiang's office. Jiang Yang shook his head and said while pointing towards Jiang Yuyan, "Not me, take her to his office, I am tired and will rest here for some time."

Upon hearing it Xiao Min replied, "But today the boss is in a bad mood so your presence might change the situation. The whole office is in chaos and you can see, even after office hours, everyone is still working."

Jiang Yuyan leaned back in a couch and said, "Xiao Min, trust me. She is the best medicine for your boss's anger. Now go and let me rest."

Xiao Min knew about Jiang Yuyan and he remembered her very well from the coffee incident at the airport. He didn't have a good impression of her in his mind since then. He knew she lives in Lu Mansion and she is a childhood friend of his boss but he was still unaware of the relation between her and Lu Qiang, though somewhere he had doubts about it but didn't want to accept it.

Jiang Yuyan looked at her brother with displeased expressions and said, "Why did you bring me here for? You should come with me too or I am not going."

Jiang Yang closed his eyes and said, “I just came out of long surgery in the hospital and I am not in a mood to handle both of your tantrums. Let me rest.”

Jiang Yuyan frowned and stood up to follow Xiao Min. Xiao Min knocked on the door of Lu Qiang’s office and asked Jiang Yuyan to go inside while he stayed outside of the office. She opened the door and enter inside just to see, Lu Qiang who was immersed in his work and was not aware of her presence. She observed his office. It was a nice feeling to see where her man works and spend most of the time of his day.

The office was huge and luxurious with a European style interior. It had huge glass windows which made it easy to see the beautiful view outside and to brighten up the place with sunlight. As his office was on the twentieth floor it made it even worthy to see the view outside. She didn’t fail to notice that, the office had the same color combination of white and silver-grey color as in Lu Qiang’s bedroom. She noticed beautiful and classy wall pieces, a couch luxurious with a glass center table, few more doors in that office and she wondered what might be behind those doors.

Lu Qiang’s was working while sitting in his chair behind his stylish office table which was exactly opposite to where Jiang Yuyan was standing inside the room just near the door. She noticed his serious expressions while working with full concentration. She found him too attractive like this. Though she was hesitant after their fight, she gathered up courage and started to step towards him slowly.

“What happened Xiao Min?” Suddenly Lu Qiang spoke which startled Jiang Yuyan and she halted in her track but didn’t answer him.

It was a while since Lu Qiang heard knock on his office door, then the sound of the door open and close and someone stepping inside. Lu Qiang thought it was Xiao Min as no one dared to enter inside his office like this. As there was no reaction from the person entered inside, finally he had to ask by himself. Just then Lu Qiang smelled the familiar scent. He stopped going through the documents and lifted his head up to

look at the source of that scent and he couldn't help but feel surprised and kept staring at Jiang Yuyan like he was in a daze.

Jiang Yuyan felt nervous when he looked at her. She couldn't take a single step towards him and rooted in her place. Lu Qiang came out of his daze, stood up from his chair, pressed one button beside his work table and straight stepped towards Jiang Yuyan. As he reached near her, he didn't ask her anything like 'Why she came to his office?' or 'How or With whom she came?' He didn't speak a single word and straight kissed her.

That sudden kiss from him was like out of the blue for her. She tried to resist as it was sudden and they were in his office but Lu Qiang didn't care about anything and kissed her while holding her both hands behind her back tightly as she was using them to push him away. Finally, Jiang Yuyan stopped struggling and let him kiss her. As she stopped struggling, Lu Qiang parted his lips from hers, looked into her eyes with intense gaze while still holding her closer to him tightly.

"You don't want to be with me in your bedroom as you feel embarrassed but this is my office and here, I can even take you to the bed behind that door and can do whatever I want with you and trust me you won't even feel like to resist or stop me."

Jiang Yuyan gulped and looked at him with her moist eyes and said, "someone might come inside and brother Yang is here too."

"I already locked the door and don't worry about your brother." Lu Qiang said it and kissed her again. He slid his tongue inside her mouth and was tasting her ferociously. He was harsh on her like he was making up for his suffering from last night when he had to stop himself from going back to her when she was just in the room next to his.

178 Making Up For The Last Night...

After sharing a long breathless and passionate kiss, Lu Qiang finally let go of Jiang Yuyan but the way he looked at her with intense and hungry for more gaze, showed that he was not in a mood to stop just with this simple kiss. His gaze startled her and she moved back. Before she could move back further, he held her hand and took her to the couch in the office. Jiang Yuyan followed him quietly. Lu Qiang sat in the couch first then pulled her with a light tug which made her sit on his lap.

Lu Qiang tugged the loose hair strands which were hanging down on either side of her face, behind her ears as he found them as an obstacle. He moved his one hand behind her neck while he circled another one around her to hold her in a place.

Jiang Yuyan too circled her one arm around his neck and placed another one on his chest. With her hand on his chest, she could feel his heart beats which were way too faster. Lu Qiang kissed her again and started to suck and nibble her lips like a hungry wolf. This time, as Jiang Yuyan was sitting in his lap, she had an upper hand to control the kiss. After assaulting her delicate lips to his heart content, when Lu Qiang was about to slide his tongue inside her mouth to taste her sweetness, she moved back and broke the kiss, while Lu Qiang didn't want to part away from her soft lips.

Lu Qiang looked at her with a displeased look but Jiang Yuyan ignored it. He was about to say something but before that, Jiang Yuyan shut him out by putting her four-finger on his lips saying, "Shhhhhh!" She stared back into his eyes and said in a bold way, "What do you think, Were you the only one who missed it and craved for it?"

Lu Qiang looked at her with a questioning look, "Huh?" Her bold attitude never failed to make him speechless but he liked and wanted her to be like this always.

Jiang Yuyan moved her forefinger from his lips and said while caressing his lips with her thumb and staring at them, “I too missed it as much as you did, that last night every passing moment made me feel like coming to you in your room.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang held her tightly, got up from the couch with Jiang Yuyan in his arms and stepped towards one of the doors in his office. It startled Jiang Yuyan and she asked, “Where are you taking me?”

“To make up for the last night,” Lu Qiang replied while looking in the direction of the door. As they reached in front of the door, he asked Jiang Yuyan to open it as his hands were busy in carrying her. Jiang Yuyan did what he asked her to do and opened the door by moving the doorknob with her hand. When they entered inside, she saw it was a huge and stylish bedroom. She didn’t expect to see such a luxurious place behind that door as it was Lu Qiang’s office, not his home.

Lu Qiang straight took her to the king size beautiful bed in the room and made her sit on the edge of the bed. Jiang Yuyan knew what he was up to and didn’t say anything as she too missed him a lot last night and wanted it as much as he did.

Lu Qiang sat down on his knees and started to take off her sandals to which Jiang Yuyan said, “I will do it.”

Lu Qiang didn’t stop and said, “Stay still, let me do this.” Jiang Yuyan smiled to see him doing it for her. She couldn’t help but think, it is too romantic and found him too adorable. She was staring at him till the last moment until he removed her both sandals

As soon as he finished removing her sandals, Lu Qiang removed his shoes and his tie too. He looked at Jiang Yuyan who was sitting on the edge of the bed while staring at him. Lu Qiang didn’t wait for a moment and kissed her. He circled one arm around her waist and pulled her towards the center of the bed while using his other hand for support from the mattress without breaking their kiss. Jiang Yuyan too circled her arms around his neck to help him move her easily.

Both reached in the center of that huge bed while kissing. Lu Qiang let her rest on the bed with her head on one pillow but

still, both didn't part away. Lu Qiang bite her lips which made her feel pain but she couldn't make a sound as her lips were sealed but she buried her nails in Lu Qiang's skin on the shoulder which made Lu Qiang even more aggressive. It was hard for her to breath now so she too bit his lip as she got a chance to do so.

Lu Qiang stopped and looked at her. He smiled mischievously and said, "I warned you before if you bite me, I will go crazy and our clothes will come off. I don't mind though" and he started to open the zipper of Jiang Yuyan's dress on her back.

Meanwhile, in the waiting room, Jiang Yang was resting comfortably while Xiao Min was anxious to think what was happening inside as he was worried that Jiang Yuyan might make his boss's mood worse. Jiang Yang opened his eyes and looked at Xiao Min. "Rest assured Xiao Min, that devil must be calm to see his calming goat."

Xiao Min didn't like this idea that Jiang Yuyan could be the one to do this. He still thought about her as a rude woman from the airport but he didn't show it on his face. He just replied as, "Hmmm!"

Jiang Yang didn't fail to notice how Xiao Min was feeling. He smiled and said, "Stop worrying Xiao Min and trust your boss's judgment."

Xiao Min felt like being caught red-handed. He nodded and sat on a couch silently. Jiang Yang spoke again, "I think all of you can go home and I should go too." He stood up as he decided to leave the place.

Xiao Min looked at him in surprise and said, "But the boss is still in office and he didn't say anything yet."

Jiang Yang picked up his car keys which he put on the center table before and replied, "Xiao Min, you can't understand the situation or you don't want to understand it? Which one is right?" Jiang Yang asked straightforwardly which made Xiao Min feel a little embarrassed.

Xiao Min cleared his throat and didn't know what to say. Jiang Yang spoke again, "If you wait for your boss, no one would be

able to go back home till morning. So trust me and do what I said. He won't say anything to you, instead, he would be glad to see it."

Xiao Min nodded and did what Jiang Yang said. Employees were happy to know this and the whole building was empty just in a while. Jiang Yang was still there and asked, "Xiao Min would you like to grab a drink with me?"

Xiao Min hesitated a bit and nodded as saying yes. Both of them left the office building too leaving Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan alone there.

179 Can't Hurt You Ever...

In Lu Qiang's office lounge..

Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were busy in their passionate lovemaking moments when Jiang Yuyan was lying in a bed with Lu Qiang on top of her being unaware of what was happening outside. As Lu Qiang pulled down the zipper of her dress and was ready to pull it down, Jiang Yuyan spoke, "W-Wait! Are we going to do it in your office lounge?"

Lu Qiang stopped pulling out her dress down to her shoulder and asked while looking into her eyes, "Why you didn't like this place?"

Jiang Yuyan replied, "Nono, it's a nice place. I was just asking if we are going to do 'That' in here."

Lu Qiang raised his eyebrow in question and asked while still being ready to pull her dress down from her shoulders, "What do you mean by 'That'?"

Jiang Yuyan blushed and replied in a low voice, "I.. mean what... people.. do in the.. situation... like this."

"What they do?" Lu Qiang counter questioned her again in a firm voice.

"I don't know, I was just saying." Jiang Yuyan felt shy to answer him as he was asking her it intentionally. She turned her face in another direction to avoid looking in his eyes.

Lu Qiang turned back her face by holding her chin with his fingers and made her look into his eyes and asked, "I want to know what did you mean exactly by 'That'."

Jiang Yuyan's face looked red to hear it as all the blood in her body was rushing to her face. She replied, "You know, what I mean by 'That'."

"No I don't, so tell me now." Lu Qiang asked again while letting go of her dress and resting his both elbows on either side of her as being ready to hear her with full attention.

Jiang Yuyan knew he won't listen so she decided to distract him. She tried to kiss him to stop him from asking the same question again but Lu Qiang moved his face back to not let her kiss him and said, "I am listening."

Jiang Yuyan had to give up in front of him and finally said it, "The thing, that husband-wife do on their wedding night."

Lu Qiang smiled to hear the way she said it and that too innocently, he asked again acting as he was curious to know, "What do they do?"

Jiang Yuyan was blushing but tried to act as she was feeling annoyed. She didn't know how to reply him back. And said, "I am not going to say it, understand what you can or let it go."

"How about, I give you a demonstration and you tell me if I am right about what you want to say." Lu Qiang saw her annoyed face and teased her even more.

Jiang Yuyan hit him on his shoulder and said, "You are too cunning. I don't want any kind of demonstration."

Lu Qiang exclaimed, "What?...I mean, weren't you just expecting us to do 'THAT'. he gave stress on the last word then said, "That thing has a proper word to address it".

Jiang Yuyan knew he was teasing her, she frowned to listen to it and said, "I know but I don't want to say it."

"Okay! Let's just do it then." Lu Qiang said it and moved his face closer to kiss her again."

Jiang Yuyan stopped him by covering his mouth with her palm and exclaimed, "W-what?... Tonight?... Here?"

Lu Qiang removed her hand from his mouth and replied, "Yes Isn't it what you were thinking and asking about"

Jiang Yuyan felt nervous to hear it and said, "When? No! I just asked in case, I should know about it if we are going to do that. I-am...." she was not able to say what she wanted to as she was feeling embarrassed.

Lu Qiang caressed her cheek with his fingers and said, "Don't be scared. I am not going to do anything that you don't want to" and kissed her on the forehead.

Jiang Yuyan felt even more nervous to hear it and she gulped. Lu Qiang looked into her eyes and asked, “Do you trust me?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and replied, “Hmmm!”

Upon hearing her reply he asked again, “You know, that I can never do anything to hurt you, right?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded again and said, “Hmmm!”

Lu Qiang gave her a peck on lips and said, “I just want you to feel, what I felt that night when you helped me.”

Upon hearing it, she remembered that night and felt like to dig a hole and hide into it out of embarrassment. Lu Qiang looked at her nervous face and said to comfort her, “Trust me, you will like it.”

Jiang Yuyan felt way too shy to hear it that she didn't say anything and just had a shy smile on her face and was thinking about how and where to hide her face from his sight.

Upon seeing, she was not saying anything, Lu Qiang understood she was in a dilemma and was feeling shy, as it was going to be something new for her. He decided to make a move without waiting for her to say anything further and kissed her.

Jiang Yuyan too kissed him back. Lu Qiang pulled her dress down and removed it from the side of her legs. She was in just two tiny pieces of clothing now. Her skin was radiating and her curves were the things that were able to seduce him any moment. He wanted to touch and explore every inch of her. He observed her from head to toe and couldn't stop himself from going back on top of her.

The way Lu Qiang looked at her and observed her from head to toe, that made a shiver run down from her spine. When he moved back on top of her and kissed her, she too replied to his kiss with the same passion. He kissed her for a while and moved from her lips to her neck to suck and nibble it hard which was leaving marks on her delicate and fair skin.

180 Moment Spoiler....

Lu Qiang moved down towards her chest. He moved his one hand towards her back to unhook the tiny piece of cloth covering her bosoms and another hand to pull down the thin straps from her shoulder. As he was about to take it down, Jiang Yuyan's body stiffened. Lu Qiang retreated his hand from her back and didn't unhook it and the other one which was about to pull down it, he moved it back too.

Jiang Yuyan noticed it and felt disappointed in herself. She never wanted to react in that way but it was her body that reacted involuntarily because of the trauma she had from her past.

Lu Qiang left her chest untouched while suppressing his desire to touch it. He didn't want the same thing to happen again which can make both of them stop halfway. This time he wanted to make her experience that beautiful feeling which she never felt before. From her chest, he moved down towards her stomach while trailing the kisses but made sure not to touch her bosoms.

When Lu Qiang kissed her on her stomach near the belly button, Jiang Yuyan felt the ticklish feeling in her lower abdomen and curled her toes. With his fingers, Lu Qiang traced the border of her undergarment to pull it down. Jiang Yuyan realized it and held both his hands with hers to stop him as she was feeling utterly shy and embarrassed.

Lu Qiang stopped as he didn't want to do anything against her will and also he understood it was natural for her to react in that way. He looked at her and said, "I won't go ahead if you really don't want it to but if you don't want it just because you are feeling shy or embarrassed then don't stop me. You don't have to feel that way with me and you know it clearly."

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan let go of his hands as signaling 'Go ahead' but just then she felt a pain in her abdomen. Her

expression changed and she whined in a very low voice but Lu Qiang didn't feel to notice it and asked, "What happened?"

Jiang Yuyan sat in the bed and said, "It's nothing. I need to go to the washroom." Lu Qiang moved to one side to give her space to get down from the bed. Jiang Yuyan immediately ran towards the bathroom and Lu Qiang felt worried to look at her.

When Jiang Yuyan went to the bathroom and checked, if what she thought was right or not and yes she was right. Her annoying periods had been arrived to put her into trouble which made her exclaimed, "Nono, it can't be, Why just now?" Why?"

She said it and sat in the bathroom helplessly while holding her head into her hands. She started to think, 'What date was it?' she counted and cursed herself for forgetting about it. She needed sanitary napkins and had a doubt that she had one with her. She felt like crying and pulling her hair out. She couldn't think of anything and continued sitting there while covering her abdomen with her palms as she could feel slowly the intensity of cramps was increasing.

Lu Qiang was worried and waiting for her to come out. When she took more time, he couldn't help but knock on the door to ask if she was okay. Jiang Yuyan collected herself and said, "Yes! I am fine." but her voice was low as she was in a pain. Lu Qiang noticed it and said, "But from your voice, you don't sound well, I am coming inside."

Jiang Yuyan replied in a hurry, "Nono! Don't." she stood up and walked towards the door in a hurry. She opened it just as much she could peek her head out and said, "Can you give me my bag?"

Lu Qiang turned and went to bring her bag which fell down on the floor when he kissed her suddenly to see her in front of him, in his office. He brought her bag and passed it to her. Jiang Yuyan checked inside if there was any sanitary napkin but as she thought before, there was none.

Jiang Yuyan felt frustrated with this and the cramps in her abdomen were making it worse for her. She suddenly realized,

her brother was outside so she took out her cellphone and called Jiang Yang.

Jiang Yang received a call and said, “Are you enjoying my little sis?” Jiang Yuyan felt annoyed to hear it and said, “My a**!”

“Wohoo! Language sis. Tell me what happened” he asked in a serious way this time. She was calling him even when Lu Qiang was with her, which means there must be something serious.

“My periods came and I don’t have sanitary napkins with me and I don’t know what to do. I am in trouble. Help me, brother,” Jiang Yuyan spoke everything in one breath as she was panicked. She too didn’t understand what she just said as it was too fast to understand.

“Calm down. Take a deep breath and say it slowly so that I can understand. Wait! What? Did you just say, you had your periods.” out of her fast speech, Jiang Yang was able to capture the word ‘Period’.

“Yes, brother!” She felt relieved that her brother understood what she was trying to say.

“So?” Jiang Yang asked casually as it was not a big deal.

Upon hearing a casual reply to her serious problem she felt annoyed and said, “What ‘so’? Help me here. You are sitting outside of the office, so come here and help me.”

Jiang Yang replied, “What do you think, I am both of yours personal bodyguard or what to wait for you guys outside when you are having fun inside. Enough of dog food now so I am going to eat something tasty now.”

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan felt embarrassed and said, “No brother, I didn’t mean it this way. Just come and help me please.”

181 My Periods...

Jiang Yang smiled to hear her pleading voice and replied, “Why don’t you ask Lu Qiang for help. From now on you should ask your man for all these things, not your brother.”

“I can’t. It’s...it’s just too embarrassing to tell him about it,” She replied in a low voice as she didn’t want Lu Qiang to hear it who was standing on the other side of the door.

“Huh? What embarrassing? Just go ahead and tell him, the way you told me just now.” Jiang Yang replied in a firm voice not wanting to surrender to her pleading. He wanted her to go to Lu Qiang for this.

“No, I can’t,” She denied again.

Jiang Yang knew, if he agreed to help her, she won’t go to Lu Qiang, so he said as showing he didn’t care about her condition, “You have to because I am not in the office building. I left it just after you went to see Lu Qiang and I am far away from that place. Moreover, I am drunk. Do you still want me to come back there?” He knew, what things can work on her best. He was enjoying the perks of knowing his sister thoroughly.

When Jiang Yang said, he was drunk, Jiang Yuyan didn’t want to trouble him. She said, “Okay!” and cut the call. Finally, she decided to do, what her brother said, as there was no other option. Just then she heard knock on the door once again.

Lu Qiang was still standing outside of the door being worried about her. She was again taking time so he couldn’t stop himself and knocked on the door.

Upon hearing a knock, Jiang Yuyan walked towards the door with a light footsteps while her hands covering her abdomen as she was experiencing the mild but painful cramps. She opened the door just like before so that she could only peek out her head. Lu Qiang looked at her and was thinking about

why she was behaving oddly. She was not even coming out of the bathroom and not even letting him in.

“Is there any problem?” he asked while looking at her flushed face

Jiang Yuyan was still hesitant to tell him. “Cough-Cough! Well, yes!”

“What happened?” he asked again.

Jiang Yuyan lowered her sight towards the floor and replied, “My periods came and I don’t have sanitary napkins with me.”

“Ohh! Okay!” Lu Qiang didn’t know how to react to this. It was the first time for him to face this situation when a girl was telling him about her period thing. The great president of Lu corporation was not able to process his mind. Jiang Yuyan too felt awkward to see his reaction but she could understand him.

Lu Qiang cleared his throat and asked, “So, What should I have to do? I mean, do I have to buy it for you?”

Jiang Yuyan nodded in embarrassment as saying, ‘Yes, please do it.’

Upon seeing her nodding, Lu Qiang spoke, “Okay! I will just go out to buy it. Will you be fine here, alone?” Jiang Yuyan nodded and said, “Don’t worry about me.”

“I will be back soon,” Just as Lu Qiang was about to turn and leave the lounge, Jiang Yuyan called him, “Lu Qiang!”

Lu Qiang turned and looked at her. “Do you want something else too.”

Jiang Yuyan’s face reddened with this and she said, “Yes!”

What? Tell me. I will bring whatever you want.” He asked casually

“I want fresh pair of undergarments too as mine has soiled now,” she replied as trying to avoid his sight.

Lu Qiang understood, what she meant and said, “Okay!” and left the lounge. As he went out of his office, he saw no one was there. He entered the lift and went downstairs and there was no one too, except for security guards. He didn’t had time to

think about it, as at that moment, helping Jiang Yuyan was important to him. The driver was ready for him with a car in front of the entrance of the building as Lu Qiang already informed him when he left his office.

When Lu Qiang reached the car, the driver opened the door of a car and was looking at him in a surprising way, just as the security guards too looked at him. It was the first time, they saw Lu Qiang in a messy condition in office premises. Even if in the times, when Lu Qiang had to work day and night without a rest, he never looked like that. His hair was a bit messy, his white shirt had few wrinkles on it with the loosened inn of a shirt, the tie was not there around his collar and top two buttons of his shirts were undone.

Lu Qiang sat in the car and first thought about where he could get sanitary pads. He thought about it and asked the driver to go to the supermarket nearby. The driver started the car and in the next ten minutes, they reached the place. Lu Qiang entered inside the supermarket and straight started to search for the section of sanitary napkins.

Soon he found it and strode towards it. He was confused to see different brands and couldn't decide which one to buy. He thought to call and ask Jiang Yuyan but he dropped the plan and decided to buy each from all brands. Just as he felt he solved his problem, his eyes caught something written on the pack of sanitary napkins. It was about its size- S, M, L and so on.

To see the size instructions on the pack, Lu Qiang pinch the space between his eyebrows and murmured to himself, "What does this size thing have to do with this?" He checked one pack to see if there are any other instructions like this. There was nothing more so he called sales girl, present there and asked her to pack each pack of every brand with all sizes available.

182 Adorable Lu Qiang!

The sales girl was young looked like in her early twenties. She looked at Lu Qiang in a surprise and asked again to confirm it, “All brands? All sizes?”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “Yes! Now make it fast.” Salesgirl didn’t ask any question and she did what Lu Qiang asked her to do without any question. Next, it was time to pay the bill. While paying the bill, the middle age man on the counter looked at Lu Qiang in a surprise too and asked, “Sir! Are you sure, you want all of these?” Lu Qiang straight starred in that man’s eyes and replied with counter-question in his usual bossy style, “Is there any problem?”

“N-No Sir, I was just making sure of it.” The middle-aged man replied as Lu Qiang’s bossy attitude scared him a little. He created a bill and quietly packed all the stuff in two huge bags.

Lu Qiang didn’t say anything and handed him over his card to make a payment. The moment, that man held Lu Qiang’s black card in his hands, he almost dropped it in a shock. He immediately made a payment and handed it back to Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang picked up those bags and stepped out of the supermarket to go towards his car. When the man on the counter saw, Lu Qiang was sitting inside his black Luxury car, he almost had a shock of his life. He realized the man who left his tiny supermarket was not an ordinary person.

Soon Lu Qiang reached to his office and stepped out of the car in hurry without giving his driver a chance to open the door for him. He picked up both bags and walked fast inside the building. When he entered inside, one man was waiting for him with one shopping bag in his hands. Lu Qiang recognized who that man was to see the logo on the bag in his hand and stepped towards him. He received that bag and the man left.

On the way to the supermarket, Lu Qiang called to one designer friend of him who designed clothes for him. He called him and asked to send some lingerie sets to his office.

He reached to the lounge and saw Jiang Yuyan was not in the room so he understood she was still in a bathroom.

Lu Qiang knocked on the door and Jiang Yuyan opened it the moment she heard it. She again peeked out her face to see outside of the bathroom. Lu Qiang was standing there with two huge bags in his hands. Jiang saw them and asked, “What are these?”

Lu Qiang replied, “The things You wanted.”

Jiang Yuyan widened her eyes and asked as she was shocked to see those huge bags in his hands, “This much?”

“I didn’t know what brand you use and also the size, so I bought each of everything. Check, which one you want.” Lu Qiang replied as he was not feeling anything odd about buying so many sanitary napkin packs for her.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t know what to say, whether to appreciate him or criticize him for this. She didn’t have much time to think about it as she was in a pain too, so she just said, “Show me.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang put a small shopping bag in his hands aside and emptied out both huge bags on the floor. Jiang Yuyan was really shocked to see it but she found him too adorable and innocent too. She was laughing in her heart forgetting about the pain she was experiencing at the moment.

This person in front of her was the president of a giant conglomerate who always got everything ready in his hands even before he asked for it but he went to buy sanitary napkins for his woman and the way he did it, that was too adorable.

Jiang Yuyan pointed towards the brand she wanted and told him about the size too. Lu Qiang immediately found out one pack and passed it to her and then he remembers about the sets of undergarments, she asked him to bring for her. He picked up the small shopping bag which he kept aside a while ago and handed over it to her.

Jiang Yuyan asked him to give her dress which he removed when they were busy in their intimate act. Lu Qiang passed

her a dress. Jiang Yuyan received it, closed the door of the bathroom and gave out a sigh of relief.

Till Lu Qiang came back, the pain in her abdomen became worse. She was maintaining normal expressions on her face while talking to Lu Qiang so that he won't be able to see, she was in a pain. She had a shower first, washed her clothes and was ready to wear her clothes. Jiang Yuyan picked up a small shopping bag and pulled out clothes from it. To her surprise, there was a stylish and expensive set of lavender color lingerie with one more dress inside of it with the same color, which looked like of her size.

Jiang Yuyan changed her clothes while thinking, how thoughtful Lu Qiang was. Though she was in a pain, his actions were able to bring a smile on her face, making her forget about her pain.

She came and out of the bathroom, just to see Lu Qiang who was arranging all sanitary napkin packs in one of the compartment of the wardrobe in his lounge.

Jiang Yuyan smiled again to see this adorable man but hide it as she didn't want to show him this.

When Lu Qiang arranged everything properly he closed the door and got back to Jiang Yuyan. She was trying hard not show him that she was in a pain but still, Lu Qiang noticed her pale face and asked, "Are you not feeling well? I will call a doctor."

Jiang Yuyan shook her head and said, "No! No need actually. Its normal thing. I will be fine soon." She said it and went to the bed as she desperately wanted to lie down.

183 It's Hurting...

Lu Qiang noticed the way she was walking slowly and her body language too was a bit different. He ignored it as he didn't want to make her feel awkward by asking her any more questions. Also, she said that it was a normal thing for her, so he preferred not to meddle until she asked for help.

Jiang Yuyan climbed into the bed and said, "I want to rest for while" and lied down. Lu Qiang went to her and put his hand on her forehead to check if she had a fever as she didn't look fine at all.

"I am fine. Just let me rest for a while," Jiang Yuyan looked at his worried face and said while pulling forced smile on her lips then she closed her eyes.

Lu Qiang didn't disturb her. He went to the wardrobe, pulled out a set of clothes for him and went to the bathroom. As he stood in front of the mirror, he noticed his messed up appearance but he didn't mind it, as it was all because of his woman whom he loved a lot.

When Lu Qiang came out of the bathroom after getting freshen up and went to the bed to lie down beside Jiang Yuyan, he noticed, She curled herself like a ball with her legs folded in knees touching to her chest. She circled her arms around her abdomen tightly. She was sweating and her face looked pale with her eyes shut tightly. She had painful expressions on her face with mild sounds of whining. Lu Qiang immediately went closer to her and this time again he touched her forehead but she didn't have a fever. He called her name and asked, "Yuyan, what happened."

Jiang Yuyan replied without looking at him with a shaking voice, "It's...It's hurting." and tears rolled down from her eyes. It scared him to see her in a pain and crying like that. He went to the center table to pick up his cellphone and dialed a number of their family doctor. He asked the doctor to come there as soon as possible without telling him a reason.

Lu Qiang went back to Jiang Yuyan and sat beside her on the edge of the bed. He didn't know how to console her or make her feel better. He was feeling helpless as he could only wait for a doctor to arrive as soon as possible. He caressed her arm which was around her abdomen and said, "I have called for a doctor, he would be here soon."

Jiang Yuyan was in too much pain to even open her eyes to look at him or to even react to what he said. Lu Qiang suddenly remembered about Jiang Yang and decided to call him as he was aware that her brother was knew everything that happens to her and must be having a solution too.

Lu Qiang dialed Jiang Yang's number. As usual, Jiang Yang replied first without saying hello or anything. "Don't be scared. It's normal to happen this with her."

Lu Qiang replied as, "Huh?"

"Looks like my sister scared the hell out of you." Jiang Yang spoke again.

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang frowned and said, "I called you to get a solution to the problem not to get updates about what I am going through at this moment."

"Haha! This is not a problem buddy. This is what is going to create a new generation of Lu's." Jiang Yang was being himself again, a shameless.

Lu Qiang was already restless to see Jiang Yuyan suffer in pain and this funny reply from Jiang Yang was annoying him. He pinched the space between his eyebrows and spoke while gritting his teeth. "I know it well, you moron, but I am talking about the pain she is going through right now. Tell me what to do until the doctor arrives here."

"Ohh! So you already called a doctor. Then wait for him. There is nothing you can do instead of just being with her." This time Jiang Yang replied in a serious way and then asked, "Is she resting now?"

"Yes! But she is not looking good." Lu Qiang replied while looking in the direction of Jiang Yuyan.

“She would be fine. This is not the first time it’s happening with her so don’t worry.” Jiang Yuyan tried to calm down Lu Qiang to which he sighed as being helpless. Suddenly Jiang Yang asked, “By the way, tell me something.”

“What?” Lu Qiang asked as he felt there must be something serious.

“How many packs of sanitary napkins you bought for her? If I am not wrong, it must be the stock for the whole year.” Jiang Yang said and laughed loudly.

Lu Qiang was speechless to hear it and thought how he knew about it. Jiang Yang sensed silence around and understood, what he thought was absolutely right. Knowing the personality of Lu Qiang, it was not hard for Jiang Yang to imagine how he could react in such a situation.

Lu Qiang frowned and cut the call without saying bye to Jiang Yang and went back to Jiang Yuyan. He was waiting for the doctor desperately as each passing moment was hard for him to see her suffering in pain. In the next half hour, the doctor arrived in Lu Qiang’s office.

Lu Qiang went out of the lounge to his office and greeted the doctor, “Thank you so much doctor Tang for coming here at this hour.”

“Not a big deal Lu Qiang. Who is the patient, you are not looking like the one,” He said while observing Lu Qiang carefully.

Doctor Tang was in his late fifties. An average height man with fine looks and well maintained personality. He was a family doctor as well as a good friend of Lu Qiang’s father, Lu Jinhai. He was being with them since Lu Qiang was a kid so he was familiar with everyone. More than a doctor, Lu Qiang treated him like his uncle but out of habit since childhood, he always called him Doctor Tang.

Lu Qiang lead Doctor Tang’s way to the lounge and took him to Jiang Yuyan. Firstly, Doctor Tang was surprised to see a woman in Lu Qiang’s private lounge and that too in his bed. Just an appearance of Lu Qiang with any woman in a picture

by chance could create big news but here the woman was sleeping in his bed. Doctor Tang understood the woman he was going to treat was someone special to Lu Qiang.

Doctor Tang looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked, “What happened to this pretty lady?”

Lu Qiang hesitated a bit to answer it. He cleared his throat and replied, “She had her periods while ago and now she is in a pain.”

Doctor Tang had a ghost smile on his face to hear it from Lu Qiang. He wanted to laugh to see Lu Qiang’s worried face but didn’t want to make him feel awkward even more. Doctor Tang examined Jiang Yuyan and injected her with medicine which can lessen her pain and make her sleep comfortably. He gave her one IV drip which would run for an hour.

Once Doctor Tang finished treating Jiang Yuyan, he and Lu Qiang went to the couch and waited for an hour as Doctor Tang had to remove IV drip. While sitting in the couch, Doctor Tang said, “So finally, you proved President Lu is not celibate”

“I never was.” Lu Qiang replied with a slight smile on his face.

“Good to hear it.” Doctor Tang too said with a smile on his face.

Doctor Tang was familiar with Jiang Yuyan’s parents and he saw Jiang Yuyan when she was a kid but after so many years he couldn’t recognize her. Later they talk about Jiang Yuyan and other stuff too and one hour passed by. Doctor Tang removed IV drip and left the place after giving few instructions to Lu Qiang while Jiang Yuyan was still sleeping soundly.

Lu Qiang lied down beside Jiang Yuyan in a bed and continued staring at her face. He could feel relieved to see her calm now as it was hard for him to see her suffering from anything. When he got to know about her past, he made a promise to himself, not let her suffer anymore but this situation was something that he couldn’t do anything for her but see her in a pain.

184 Sleep!!

One more hour passed by and Jiang Yuyan woke up. As she opened her eyes, she searched for Lu Qiang. She turned her head to her right side and saw, Lu Qiang was sleeping beside her, soundly. She smiled to see his calm face as she saw him worried for her, sometimes before. Jiang Yuyan turned on her one side to look at him and touched his face with her fingers lightly, which made him come out of his sleep.

He looked at her with his sleepy eyes and asked, “How are you feeling now?”

Jiang Yuyan replied while caressing his cheek, “I was feeling little better but as I saw you now, I am feeling much better” and smiled.

Lu Qiang smiled to hear her words. He held her hand which was caressing his cheek. He kissed in her palm and asked, “Are you still feeling pain?”

“Not much. Because of the medicine, it’s endurable now,” she replied

Lu Qiang sat up in the bed and said while getting out of it, “You haven’t eaten anything. You must be hungry.”

“Well, not much.” She replied while trying to get up and sit on the bed.

Lu Qiang helped her to sit and put some pillows behind her so that she can sit comfortably while leaning back to the headrest and said, “Still you have to eat as this is doctor’s instruction.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and asked, “Did you eat anything?”

Lu Qiang shook his head and said, “No! I was waiting for you to wake up and join me for dinner.”

Jiang Yuyan looked at the clock on the wall and said in a serious tone, “It’s almost midnight. This is not dinner time. Why haven’t you eaten anything?”

“Because I wanted to eat with you.” Lu Qiang replied casually as avoiding the seriousness in her words.

“But you could have eaten something before, then you could have joined me again.” She was upset that he hadn’t eaten anything just because of her.

Lu Qiang stepped towards her and gave her a peck on lips and said, “Enough with scolding now, let’s eat something first.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and both headed to another door in the lounge. Jiang Yuyan followed him blindly and went inside that room. She was again surprised to see, what was behind the one more door in the lounge. It was a beautiful and stylish dining room with a fully modular kitchen attached to it. Lu Qiang took her to the dining table and made her sit on one of the chairs and said, “Stay here. I will be back in five minutes.”

Lu Qiang went to the kitchen and started to unwrap the food parcel packs. Lu Qiang had already ordered dinner for both of them and was waiting for Jiang Yuyan to wake up. He put the food in the microwave to warm it up as it was cold. Once he was done, he brought it to the dining table and served in two dishes.

Jiang Yuyan was observing him while leaning back in the chair. Her sight was following him wherever he moved. She was smiling to look at him. When he finally finished everything and sat in the chair opposite to her, Jiang Yuyan was still looking at him.

Lu Qiang was aware that she was staring at him all this time. He picked up chopsticks, looked at her and said, “If your eyes have done stalking me till your heart content, you can start eating now.”

Jiang Yuyan leaned forward towards the table, rested her both arms on it with elbows and put her face on her palms. She stared in Lu Qiang’s eyes and said, “What can I do? My eyes and my heart can’t get enough of you.”

“Ohh! Someone is being bold again” he said while picking up a portion of food in chopsticks.

“It’s the fault of someone who is sitting in front of me and...” Jiang Yuyan couldn’t continue her sentence as Lu Qiang put a piece of beef in her mouth. She didn’t have any option but to eat it. Lu Qiang had a bite too, after feeding her. Just as Jiang Yuyan finished the food in her mouth and was about to say something, Lu Qiang again fed her few vegetables and didn’t give her a chance to speak.

Jiang Yuyan was eating without saying a single word. Both were eating Quietly while Lu Qiang feeding her one bite, then another to himself. It continued like this until they finished the food in front of them. Once they finished, Lu Qiang put down the chopsticks in his hands on the dining table and said, “Now you can talk.”

Jiang Yuyan wiped her mouth and said, “There is nothing to talk. When I was talking, you shut my mouth.”

Lu Qiang had calm expressions on his face and said, “You should be glad that I just fed you to shut your mouth or I know other ways to do it better. Thanks to your periods and the pain you are in now, I am sitting quietly here”

“Cough-cough! I think my cramps are back, it’s hurting a little,” she said with a painful expression on her face. She was in a pain but she was just acting to make him scared.

Upon seeing Jiang Yuyan in a pain again, Lu Qiang got up from his chair and strode towards her. “Are you okay? Is it hurting again?”

Jiang Yuyan just nodded while pouting like a little girl. Lu Qiang didn’t think for a moment and lifted her in his arms from the chair. Jiang Yuyan too didn’t say anything and was enjoying his panicked reaction. He came out of the dining room and straight took her to the bed. He put her on the bed, covered her with quilt and said, “I will call doctor, till then just rest.”

When he was about to move away from her, Jiang Yuyan held his hand. He turned to look back at her and said with the same panicked expression on his face, “I am not going anywhere, let me call the doctor.”

Jiang Yuyan didn't let go of his hands and shook her head to hear what he said. "No need. I am fine."

"But a moment before you...."

"I was pulling your leg." She replied. Still, Lu Qiang was the same and asked, "Are you saying this just to not make feel worried?"

Jiang Yuyan smiled to see his worried face and said, "There is a little pain but I can endure it. No need to call the doctor. Just come here and sleep beside me."

Lu Qiang nodded and said, "Okay!" He then turned off all the lights in the lounge, leaving only a night lamp on and lied down beside Jiang Yuyan. He turned on his one side to look at her and asked, "Where is it hurting?"

Jiang Yuyan put her palm on her abdomen and said, "Here!"

"Hmm! Turn around and sleep facing your back to me." He said and Jiang Yuyan turned without asking him 'why' even though she wanted to. She turned and felt, Lu Qiang's warm body touching to her back. She was about to ask something, just then Lu Qiang put his palm on her abdomen, caressed it and said, "Sleep!"

Jiang Yuyan felt her pain was lessening with his palm caressing her abdomen and soon fell asleep. Lu Qiang too fell asleep in no time.

185 Knight...

The next morning Lu Qiang woke up and saw Jiang Yuyan was sleeping soundly. As both slept late last night, they continued to sleep till late. Lu Qiang didn't disturb her and without making any noise he got out of the bed. He went to the bathroom and got ready in his office attire and went to his office.

It was not office hour yet, but Xiao Min came to the office early as on the previous day he left without informing his boss and even gave an order to all the employees to go back to their homes. He was worried that Lu Qiang might be upset with him.

Xiao Min knew Lu Qiang was in an office as he got a call from Lu mansion in the middle of the night to ask his whereabouts and he had to tell them that he was in office. He didn't mention anything about Jiang Yuyan being in the office with him.

Xiao Min knocked on the door and went inside. Lu Qiang was already working there while sitting in a chair and going through the documents. Xiao Min stepped inside and said, "Good Morning boss!"

Lu Qiang looked at him and said, "Morning Xiao Min."

Xiao Min was surprised to see a normal reaction from his boss. He gave out a sigh of relief and then started to give him a report about yesterday's incident.

"Yesterday, I asked all employees to go home as it was past office hour time and also, Mr. Jiang Yang asked me to do the same."

There was no reaction from Lu Qiang so Xiao Min continued, "Last night I got a call from Lu mansion to ask about your whereabouts and I said you are in the office and busy with some work."

Still, there was no reaction from Lu Qiang and he continued to work on his laptop.

Xiao Min gulped as he was worried about why his boss was not reacting and thought 'if he did anything wrong' but still he continued, "Also, I didn't say a word about Ms. Jiang Yuyan came to the office. Upon hearing it finally there was a reaction from Lu Qiang and he said, "You did well Xiao Min."

Xiao Min was surprised to hear it. Till now he told his boss about two major problems but he didn't react but when he said about Jiang Yuyan, he reacted. He thought, 'Is this woman that important to his boss?'

He came out of his thoughts and said, "I will bring breakfast."

"Make it for two people." Lu Qiang said without even looking at him.

Xiao Min asked, "Two people?"

"Yes! Me and Ms. Jiang Yuyan." Lu Qiang replied and continued his work.

Xiao Min was surprised again to hear it as to know, Jiang Yuyan was in office so that means she was there for a whole night. Xiao Min collected himself after getting a shock and left the office. His boss who never batted an eye for any woman in his life now has a woman who spent a night with him.

In a while, Xiao Min came back with a tray filled with breakfast with him and one man behind him with too many shopping bags in his hands. It was a man from the same designer house from where Lu Qiang ordered clothes on last night. As he was in a hurry and panicked he didn't think at that moment that she might need more clothes so he ordered more clothes for her. Lu Qiang asked that man to keep all the bags on the couch. The man left after bowing down to Lu Qiang.

As Xiao Min was about to keep the tray in his hands on the table, Lu Qiang stood up from his place and asked him to pass that tray. Xiao Min obeyed and passed the tray to Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang went to the lounge and took breakfast to the dining room. When he came back, he saw Jiang Yuyan was awake. She woke up a moment after Lu Qiang went to the kitchen as

she heard the sound of the door. Lu Qiang went towards her, gave her peck on lips and said, “Good Morning!”

Jiang Yuyan smiled and replied, “Good Morning.”

“How are you feeling now?” he asked while moving the hair strands from her face to one side.

“Great!” she replied with a cheerful voice.

“I brought breakfast here. Get fresh before it gets cold,” he said and stepped back to give her space to get down from the bed.

Upon hearing the word breakfast, Jiang Yuyan sat in a bed and asked, “What time is it?”

“It’s eight in the morning.” He replied

Upon hearing it, she panicked and said, “Ohh no! In Lu mansion, everyone must be worried to not see me on the breakfast table. What would they think about me to know that I was out for a night.”

Lu Qiang was not worried at all. He replied casually, “You don’t have to be worried about it. Your knight is there to solve everything for you.”

“Huh?” Jiang Yuyan didn’t get what he was talking about.

Upon seeing his confused face, Lu Qiang replied, “Lu Feng told them, that you are with Jiang Yuyan. He called while ago to tell me this

“He lied?” she asked

“Not really. When Lu Lijun reached home with Lu Feng and you were not with them, they asked him where you are as you were not with him. At that time, you were with Jiang Yang so he told them what was the fact at that time.”

“Still..”

“Don’t be worried about them as they think that you are at Jiang residence. Now hurry up or breakfast would be cold in no time.”

Jiang Yuyan obeyed and did what he said. Before she could get inside the bathroom, Lu Qiang handed her over the shopping bag which he picked up from the couch in his office and said, "This is for you."

Jiang Yuyan understood it was again clothes for her as the bag was the same as from last night. She said, "Thank you." and went inside the bathroom. Lu Qiang went back to his office and picked up all the shopping bags from the couch to bring them to the lounge. He took out the clothes from those bags and started to arrange them on one side in his wardrobe.

Jiang Yuyan came out of the bathroom and saw Lu Qiang was doing something in his wardrobe. She went closer and said, "These dresses?"

Lu Qiang turned to look at her and said, "All for you. When next time you come to this place, I don't want you to lack for anything. Whatever you want, everything is here."

"But there was no need. I am not going to come to your office as I don't like business things and their offices too."

"Hmm! But, sometimes we have to do the things that we really don't like. I too never like a business but see what I am doing now. What if in the future, you have to sit on my chair and have to handle all this."

"I pray that day won't come ever or we will just do one thing. We can make Lu Lijun sit in this chair, once he is an adult and we both can spend our lives in peace somewhere far."

Lu Qiang nodded and said, "Well, not a bad idea."

Both laughed and went to the dining room for breakfast.

186 Surprise In Office...

After breakfast, Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yuyan to take a rest and not to go to the university but she insisted on going and said that she was feeling quite better. Surrendering to her pleading, Lu Qiang took her to the university. Once he dropped her there, he came back to the office and till then it was the time of office hours and all employees were present in the office. All were scared that they might have to face the wrath of Lu Qiang again but to their surprise, the day was a normal and peaceful one.

After the morning classes, Jiang Yuyan was feeling weak again and she didn't look good. Nixxie noticed her pale face and said, "If that moron is troubling you more then tell me, I will teach him a nice lesson."

"No, It's not like that Nixx, Actually....."

"What's the problem with all you girls to get blind in love. If they trouble you just kick their butts and get rid of them." Again as her usual self, she didn't give Jiang Yuyan a chance to speak. Also, Jiang Yuyan was already feeling weak so she didn't have the energy to argue much and didn't bother to explain the thing. Cramps in her abdomen were getting worse so she had to call her brother. She didn't call Lu Qiang as she thought, he might be busy in his work and didn't feel it right to disturb him.

During lunchtime, Jiang Yang came to receive her. Nixxie was with Jiang Yuyan to see her off at university gate as she looked weak and also, later she got to know, why Jiang Yuyan was not feeling good. When Nixxie saw Jiang Yang, she whispered in Jiang Yuyan's ear, "Was he the only man available for u?" and sighed.

As Jiang Yang reached to them, Jiang Yuyan said, "Nixx meet my brother, Jiang Yang."

Nixxie was surprised to hear it and said, "Brother?"

Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yang both nodded together and were smiling to say together, “Yes! A brother.”

“Well, it was not my fault. you are so pretty and your brother..... hmmm!” Nixxie said while observing Jiang Yang head to toe.

“I too am wondering, my sister is so pretty and why her friend..... hmmm!. I was expecting more for nothing.” Jiang Yang too said it while observing her head to toe.

Nixxie frowned to hear it and said, “That more from me is not for the person like you.” She then looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, “Next class time see you tomorrow and take care,” She said it and left in a hurry.

Just as she reached a few steps ahead, Jiang Yang spoke, “You should change your taste to give that more to someone.”

Nixxie halted in her track, turned and said, “Even if I change it, it won’t be you for sure.” She said it left not giving Jiang Yang a chance to say anything further.

Jiang Yang smiled and said, “This girl seems interesting.”

“Hmm! I think it’s high time for you to get a girl now. She is nice though.” Jiang Yuyan said while signaling him to leave while Jiang Yang nodded to what his sister said.

Both sat in the car and left. On the way after some time, Jiang Yuyan realized, where he was taking her and said, “Why are you taking me to his office. He might be busy.”

“If I won’t take you to him when you are not feeling well, two people might lose their lives. Do you want that?” he asked while concentrating on his driving.

“Two people! and why so?” She asked.

“Yes! Two people. The first person is me, whom he will kill as I won’t take you to him and the second one is the patient who is waiting for his surgery to get done in the next one and half hour and might die as I won’t be able to operate him.” Jiang Yang replied

“So you have to attend the surgery?” She asked with displeased expressions on her face.

“Don’t forget sis, I am a doctor and lives of my patients are in my skillful hands.”

She knew her brother was right but she didn’t want to trouble Lu Qiang again, so she said, “Hmmm! Right, then take me to Lu mansion.”

Upon hearing her, he asked, “Do you want him to leave his work and be at home with you?”

“I don’t want to disturb his work that’s why I am asking you to take me to Lu Mansion,” she replied

Jiang Yuyan was not understanding, what her brother was trying to say so he got annoyed and said, “Haaa sis! Why your three digit IQ brain doesn’t function properly whenever it comes to that devil. You don’t know him well yet. Let’s just go to his office first.”

“But...”

“No more word, just rest,” he said and continued to focus on driving.

Jiang Yuyan leaned back and closed her eyes. Jiang Yang remembered about something, laughed suddenly and said, “I should have been there to see his face last night. Damn, I missed the chance to see him like that, scared and anxious and only you can make it happen, sis.”

“How do you know, he was scared and anxious?” She asked.

“He called me to get a solution for your cramps. I wonder, in future, when you would be giving birth to his child and would be in labor pain, what he will do and how he will react? Thank god, I am not a gynecologist or I would be in trouble.” he said it and laughed again.

Jiang Yuyan didn’t find it funny and said, “Not at all funny brother.” she looked irritated.

“Damn these hormonal changes and periods. Won’t even let you be happy for the next few days. Control yourself from being cranky as I am going to enjoy the show and It’s once in a lifetime opportunity to see him like that and I won’t miss it,” he said and laughed again.

Jiang Yang took Jiang Yuyan to the office. He already informed Lu Qiang and he asked him to bring Jiang Yuyan to his office. Jiang Yang left after taking her there and said while leaving the office, "I would be back in the evening."

In the evening, the whole office building was empty after office hours except for security guards. Lu Qiang gave some necessary instructions for the next day to Xiao Min and asked him to go back home. Jiang Yang came to the office and both went to the lounge as Jiang Yang wanted to meet Jiang Yuyan.

Jiang Yuyan was sleeping, both sat in the couch. As they were talking, they heard a knock on the door and the door opened. Lu Qiang and Jiang Yang were surprised to see the person in front of them.

That was Lu Feng and it was the most surprising thing for Lu Qiang that he finally came to his office. Lu Feng broke his resolution of all these years and finally came. Jiang Yang too was aware of the fact, how big of a thing was it. Both stood up to see Lu Feng there, but no one knew what to say. Lu Qiang was happy but had no word to say and the same thing happened with Lu Feng. Lu Feng never thought he would ever come to this place but he came.

187 I Want My Own Child...

A chapter dedicated to all of those who read with premium SS and support me. Thank you for allowing me to do what I love. Enjoy the chapter.... :)

Jiang Yang wanted to break this silence around them, so he strode towards Lu Feng, hugged him and said, “Darling, how come you are here? Did you miss me that much?”

Lu Feng didn’t react harshly or felt annoyed. He was aware that Jiang Yang was playing around to ease the tension so Lu Feng replied, “Yes! I was about to die by missing you badly and hugged him back.”

Jiang Yang took him to the couch as Lu Qiang was still standing there. Lu Qiang stepped towards Lu Feng, hugged him too and said, “I am glad to see you here, Lu Feng.”

Lu Feng hugged him but didn’t reply to his words and just said, “I am here to check on Yuyan.” He sat in the couch beside Jiang Yang and asked, “How is she?”

“She is fine now but looked tired so I asked her to sleep,” Lu Qiang replied.

Jiang Yang smiled to see these brothers and said, “I think, my sister is the good omen for you guys. Since she came back, unexpected things are happening here.”

“Indeed!” Lu Qiang replied while Lu Feng just smiled awkwardly. It was difficult for Lu Feng to take a decision against what he followed all these years but when he heard from Jiang Yang that he took Jiang Yuyan to Lu Qiang as she was again not feeling well, he couldn’t stop himself and followed the way to Lu Corporation.

Again all three were together. Jiang Yang looked at Lu Qiang and said, “Let’s drink something nice,” then he looked at Lu Feng and asked, “What you say?”

“Okay!” Lu Feng replied.

Lu Qiang stood up from the couch and went to the dining room to bring a wine bottle from the mini cellar there. As Lu Qiang went inside, Jiang Yang too stood up and observed the whole place carefully to find something but he couldn't. Finally, he stepped towards the wardrobe and opened it. He laughed to see the wardrobe as he found what he was searching for. He called Lu Feng to come to the wardrobe too and see what was there.

Lu Feng was a little surprised to see the wardrobe and felt awkward. He glared at Lu Feng and was about to turn and go back to the couch, just then Lu Qiang came back from the dining room with one wine bottle and two glasses with him. He saw, Jiang Yang and Lu Feng were standing in front of his wardrobe and looking at what was inside.

Lu Qiang put the wine bottle and glasses on the center table and pinched the space between his eyebrows in annoyance. Lu Feng realized, Lu Qiang was there so he turned and said, “It was not me. It was Jiang Yang. You can do whatever with him. I am out of this.”

Jiang Yang too turned without being bothered by what Lu Feng said. “I was just wondering what you did with all this stuff so I was just trying to ease the curiosity.”

Lu Feng went back to the couch and sat quietly while Lu Qiang strode towards the wardrobe and closed it in a hurry. “A** hole!”

Jiang Yang laughed again and went back to the couch as saying, “World's one and only man, whose wardrobe is filled with sanitary napkins more than his own clothes.” It made Lu Feng smile while Lu Qiang felt like to hit Jiang Yang but he controlled as Jiang Yuyan was sleeping there.

Lu Qiang too followed him and said while pointing towards center table, “There it is, what you both wanted.”

Jiang Yang looked at him and asked, “Only two glasses, are you not drinking?”

Before Lu Qiang could answer, Lu Feng spoke, “He is trying to be an ideal husband” and winked at Jiang Yang with a smile on his face. Lu Qiang noticed but ignored it.

“Ahh! I see. Let him be then. Let’s start.” Jiang Yang said and poured wine in both glasses while Lu Qiang quietly sat on the couch. Just as Jiang Yang was about to take a sip Lu Qiang asked, “Don’t you think, you are drinking more nowadays. What’s the problem?”

Lu Feng too agreed to what Lu Qiang said and asked, “Lu Qiang is right. What’s the problem?”

“What problem? I am with you guys so just wanted to chill, that’s it.” Jiang replied and took a sip.

Lu Qiang and Lu Feng looked at each other. Just as Lu Feng was about to ask him something again, Jiang Yang spoke, “Lu Qiang!”

Lu Qiang was expecting him to share what was his problem and said, “Yes!”

“I was wondering, what will you do to see my sister in labor pain. Will you hit the doctor for not being able to lessen her pain or you will hit yourself for your doing,” he said and laughed again.

Upon hearing it, Lu Feng almost spurted out the wine in his mouth, while Lu Qiang frowned again and replied, “If giving birth to our child is going to hurt her, then we won’t plan one and we will prefer to adopt someone.”

“No way! I want my own child.”

Suddenly they heard a voice and looked in its direction. Jiang Yuyan was awake and she was sitting in a bed.

Lu Qiang stood up from the couch and went towards her.

“How are you feeling now?”

Jiang Yuyan ignored his question and asked, “What were you saying to them?”

Lu Qiang answers, “I was just trying to shut your brother’s chatterbox mouth. Of course, we will have our own kids and as many as you want.”

Upon hearing it she calmed down and stepped down from the bed. She went straight towards the couch and asked Jiang Yang to handed over the wine glass in his hands to her. Jiang Yang looked at her and said, "In this condition, it's not good for you to drink the wine." he tried to divert her but Jiang Yuyan looked firm on what she had decided. She stood there without blinking an eye and staring her brother with serious expressions on her face.

"Well it's not good for the man either to mess up with a woman when she is in the state with unstable hormones," he said it and passed the wine glass to his sister.

After taking wine glass from Jiang Yang, she turned towards Lu Feng and looked at him. Lu Feng was about to take a sip after enjoying the show of what Jiang Yuyan did to her brother but he had to stop and handed over his wine glass to Jiang Yuyan too. She didn't say a single word and went to the dining room after taking a wine bottle with her.

Once she went inside, Lu Qiang smiled mischievously to look at both Lu Feng and Jiang Yang. "Well, my woman took my revenge in a better way instead of me beating you guys for annoying me till now."

Both noticed didn't say anything as they were like a scared cat in front of Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang got the reason to laughed at them.

Suddenly Jiang Yang spoke to look at Lu Qiang. "Well, it's not good to argue with her when she is cranky so it's better to listen, what she says. It's my advice to you, my friend."

"Thanks but I always listen to her, whatever it is." Lu Qiang replied.

Jiang Yang nodded and said, "Hmm! I know but still, be careful,"

188 New Girl In The Mansion..

After spending the evening together in Lu Qiang's office, Lu Qiang decided to go to the Lu Mansion before dinner time. Lu Qiang asked Jiang Yang to come along with them too, as both siblings could spend some time more together. As they reached near to their cars, Lu Feng spoke, "Lu Qiang!"

Lu Qiang was about to step towards his car, he turned to look at Lu Feng to know why he called.

"Nobody in Lu Mansion should know that I came here to Lu corporation." Lu Feng said with serious expressions on his face.

Lu Qiang nodded and replied, "Rest assured" but in his mind, he was still thinking 'Why?'. He didn't ask Lu Feng as he knew, he won't ever get the answer to his question.

Lu Qiang was waiting for Jiang Yuyan to sit in his car but she went to her brother's instead. These three men looked at her in surprise, that why she was not going towards Lu Qiang's car. Lu Qiang called her and asked, "Yuyan! Where are you going?"

"Did you forget, I am with my brother, since last night." This answer from her, made them realize why she did that and all three silently sat in their respective cars. That day, Jiang Yuyan was scary for them, as all the time she shut their mouths with her replies in a cold way.

When Jiang Yuyan sat in Jiang Yang's car, he looked at her and said, "You are scary when you have your periods. It feels like you are taking out your rage of being suffered, on all of us."

"Can't you guys use your brains instead of asking me silly questions?" she replied in a cold way again then closed her eyes and leaned back in her seat.

“You and your mood swings, sigh!” Jiang Yang didn’t disturb her. He started the car and drove in the direction of Lu mansion, quietly. As Lu Qiang’s car entered the Lu Mansion’s gate, he saw, at the main door of the Lu Mansion, few family members were present with two cars parked there.

Lu Qiang stepped down from his car and went to see what happened. He saw that was his uncle and aunt, returned back from their ancestral village. With them, someone else was there too, a girl who looked familiar.

As they all saw Lu Qiang’s car, they looked at him. His parents, grandparents, uncle-aunt and the girl were waiting for Lu Qiang to come to them. As Lu Qiang reached to them, a girl stepped towards him and asked, “Lu Qiang! How have you been? It’s been so long since we last saw each other.”

Lu Qiang recognized her and replied, “I am fine, Zhi Ruo.”

“Ohh! So this ice-cold person still remembers me?” She said with a bright smile on her face and Lu Qiang just smiled a little in as a reply to her words. She continued talking and Lu Qiang was listening to her.

Just then, Jiang Yang and Lu Feng’s car arrived inside a gate and they saw, Lu Qiang was talking to one girl and that girl had a wide smile on her face, as she was excited to see Lu Qiang. They looked in the direction of cars too but continued talking again. These three stepped out of their cars. Jiang Yuyan was looking at Lu Qiang and that girl, with cold expressions on her face.

Jiang Yang noticed it and said, “Yuyan! It’s not you. These are your periods which are making you feel salty. Calm down that girl might be a relative.”

“My a**! I don’t care.” Jiang Yuyan replied with cold expressions on her face and anger in her voice. Lu Feng stepped out of his car too and went towards Jiang siblings. He too noticed Jiang Yuyan’s reaction and heard what these two talked about. Lu Feng looked at that new girl and recognized her then said, “Ohh! That’s Zhi Ruo.”

“Zhi Ruo?” Jiang Yang asked curiously while Jiang Yuyan was still looking in the direction of Lu Qiang with no expression on her face. She was looking at how that girl was talking to him while laughing and Lu Qiang was listening to her, carefully.

Suddenly, Lu Qiang looked in the direction of Jiang Yuyan but she averted her sight from him and looked at her brother then said, “Let’s go inside. I am already feeling tired.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Feng said, “Okay! Let’s go. Anyhow that girl is not that important.” Lu Feng noticed, Jiang Yuyan was not happy to see Lu Qiang talking to that girl and preferred to take her inside first and then explain who was that girl.

Looking at her current cranky behavior, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang understood it was not a good idea to keep her standing there.

As they headed to go inside the Lu Mansion, Elder Lu called these three. Lu Feng asked Jiang siblings to go ahead and he stood behind. He was never interested in any guest who came to Lu mansion. Elder Lu was aware of this fact too, so he didn’t ask Lu Feng to come again. As Jiang siblings reached to them, Lu Jinhai introduced them to their guest, “Zhi Ruo, meet Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yang, my best friend’s kids.”

Zhi Ruo smiled to look at these two and said ‘Hello!’ with a handshake. Jiang siblings too smiled and greeted her. Then Lu Jinhai introduced Zhi Ruo to them saying, “Zhi Ruo is one of our board of director’s daughter and also aunt Su Hui’s niece” and further explained more things about her.

Zhi Ruo was the daughter of one of the most important people in Lu corporation, Mr. Zhi Guang. He was one of the closest and trustable people of Lu Jinhai. He was handling Lu Corporation’s business in country Z. He supported Lu Qiang when Lu Jinhai was hospitalized and Lu Qiang needed someone strong on his side as Zhi Guang was one of the major shareholders in the Lu Corporation too. For his help, Lu Qiang and the whole Lu family were grateful to him.

A few years back, Zhi Ruo came to Lu Corporation to learn about business and she worked under Lu Qiang for six months.

Later she went to the UK for further studies and came back recently after finishing her studies.

After the introduction, elder Lu asked everyone to go inside. Once they reached the living room, Jiang Yuyan excused herself to go to her room. Lu Qiang too noticed, Jiang Yuyan didn't look well so he was worried, she might be in pain again. Once Jiang Yuyan left, he too excused himself in a while. Lu Feng took Jiang Yang with him to his room.

When Lu Qiang reached upstairs, instead of going to his own room, Lu Qiang stopped in front of Jiang Yuyan's room. He knocked on the door and opened it with worried expressions on his face. He saw, Jiang Yuyan was lying on a bed so he stepped towards her in a hurry and asked, "Are you okay?"

"What can happen to me. I am just resting," she replied coldly, ignoring his worried reaction.

189 Jealous? My A**!

Lu Qiang was too anxious that couldn't notice the coldness in her voice and the way she was avoiding to look at him. He thought it must be because she was not feeling well. He asked again, "But you don't look good. Tell me if it's hurting again. We can call the doctor."

"Don't worry about me and attend your important guest as you are meeting her after a long time." She replied and turned on to her one side in a bed to face her back towards him.

Lu Qiang finally understood the reason behind her such behavior. She was jealous and he felt good to see this. He smiled and sat beside her. "Father told you who she is. No need to feel jealous."

"Jealous? My A**!" Jiang Yuyan replied still her back facing towards him with her eyes closed.

Upon hearing these words from her for the first time, Lu Qiang couldn't help but laugh and realized, it was another side of her personality and he liked it. "Haha! Then what is it? Go, get fresh and let's go for dinner."

"Nothing! Let me rest and you go have fun with your girl. I am not hungry." She said in annoyance as to know, Lu Qiang thought, she was jealous because of that girl and the most annoying thing was that it was the truth. She couldn't stop herself from feeling jealous when she saw him talking to one beautiful girl with whom he had already spent six months to teach her the work. Also, upon remembering, how that girl was talking to him as she knew Lu Qiang for ages and he belongs to her, it made her even saltier.

Lu Qiang remembered, what Jiang Yang said about her cranky behavior during her periods. He realized, she won't listen to him easily even if he tried to convince her with soft and caring words. He turned her towards him as she was facing her back to him and went on top of her but he was careful to not put his weight on her abdomen.

“Do you want me to show you, who is my girl? Be thankful for your periods or I would have let you see it, right at this moment.”

Jiang Yuyan tried to push him away by using her hands on his chest, but he held her hands in his and pinned them in a bed on either side of her body. “Stop struggling. It’s not good for you to waste your energy in this condition as you are already weak,” he said in a commanding voice while looking into her eyes which made her give up on her struggle to push him away.

As Jiang Yuyan stopped struggling, Lu Qiang kissed her. Since the last evening in his office, Lu Qiang didn’t kiss her even if they were together for a long time but now he didn’t want to control himself. He was gentle this time and he was sucking and nibbling her lips slowly while savoring their taste. Jiang Yuyan too started to enjoy it forgetting what she was feeling moments before and both indulged in this slow act of love, savoring each other to their heart content.

Lu Qiang was not in a hurry and continued to do it slowly for a while then parted away from her lips and asked, “Did you miss it?”

Jiang Yuyan breath deeply and nodded while looking into his pitch black passionate eyes with her moist one, as saying “Yes!”

Upon seeing her nodding, Lu Qiang smiled as his sight continued to move from her eyes to her lips and asked, “Will you be fine if I kiss you for a while more in this condition.?”

Jiang Yuyan again nodded to say yes. Lu Qiang didn’t wait and kissed her again. This time he slid his tongue in her mouth and played with her tongue till her tongue felt numb. She didn’t have much energy and pulled her tongue back in a while. Lu Qiang realized and moved his lips away from her with the thread of saliva visible which broke when he moved further away.

Jiang Yuyan looked tired and was trying to breathe. Her eyes were watery too. Lu Qiang felt a bit bad. He wiped her wet lips with his thumb and said, “Sorry!” Jiang Yuyan shook her

head and said while using her palm to wipe his lips, “You don’t need to.” Lu Qiang kissed her palm and said, “Let’s go for dinner, they must be waiting for us.”

“Okay!” she replied. Lu Qiang kissed her on the forehead and stepped down from the bed then helped Jiang Yuyan to get down too. “Get fresh and come down. I am going to my room to freshen up.”

Jiang Yuyan nodded and Lu Qiang left for his room. As Jiang Yuyan went out of her room, Lu Qiang too came out from his room at the same time. Both went downstairs together. Everyone was already present in the living room. Upon seeing these two, coming downstairs together, everyone had different reactions.

Elder Lu looked at his wife and said, “See the future of Lu Mansion” to which Zhao Shuang nodded and said, “King and Queen of future.”

Lu Jinhai and his wife Ning Jiahui too felt glad to see them together. Lu Jinhai whispered in his wife’s ear, “Be ready to get Daughter-in-law and start the preparations soon.” to which, Ning Jiahui nodded with an ear to ear smile on her face.

Jiang Yang poked Lu Feng and said, “By the look of it, I thought my sister will take time to get convince by your brother but they came early.”

“We are Lus. Don’t ever doubt our skills with women and my brother knows how to use them, really well.” Lu Feng replied

Jiang Yang looked in his sister’s direction and said, “Yeah! I never doubt it though as it’s not easy to tame this tigress.”

Lu Feng too looked in the direction of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan and said, “Hmm! Right.” When these two were busy with their talk they heard a voice.

“They look good together” upon hearing it both Lu Feng and Jiang Yang replied together while looking into the direction of Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan, “Indeed!”

Then, both looked in the direction of the voice and saw, that was Lu Lijun who was standing beside them and he too was looking at Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan.

190 Future King...

Everyone in the living room was very happy to see Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan together, except for Su Hui. She didn't like Jiang family as they were too close to Lu Jinhai and he considered Jiang Peizhi as his brother. She always thought, Lu Jinhai gave more importance to Jiang prize instead of her husband Lu Chen who had the same blood as Lu Jinhai.

She never liked Jiang Yuyan much too, as she was pampered by elder Lu even more than his own grand-daughters. whenever Jiang Yuyan came to Lu mansion in the past, it was always about her and everyone just paid attention to her only.

When Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan reached downstairs, all went to the dining table except for Lu Qiang who suddenly had a call from country Z about something important matter of business over there. Lu Qiang excused himself and asked others to start dinner and he will join in soon. When everyone reached the dining room they sat on their own designated chairs. Zhi Ruo was unaware of which chair belonged to whom and unintentionally sat in the chair which was empty and closer to where she was standing. That chair was the one where Jiang Yuyan sat always, beside Lu Qiang.

To see Zhi Ruo sitting in her chair, Jiang Yuyan didn't say anything as Zhi Ruo was the guest of Lu Family and moved to sit on another empty chair which was on the other side of the dining table. When she passed behind from Lu Lijun's chair, he stopped her by holding her hand and said, "Wait!" it startled Jiang Yuyan and others too when they saw it, but before they could ask anything, Lu Lijun spoke while looking at Zhi Ruo, "That chair belongs to Yuyan. You can sit in the other one."

Jiang Yuyan felt surprised to hear it and she realized, Lu Lijun too called her as only 'Yuyan' instead of her full name. Till now he never called her with any name and it was the first time he was saying it. He was the fourth person to call her like this other than those three important men in her life. Lu Feng

and Jiang Yang too noticed the same thing and smiled to know, Lu Lijun was one of them too.

Zhi Ruo felt a little awkward to hear what Lu Lijun said as it was not her fault totally and nobody stopped her from sitting there but she apologized and immediately stood up to sit in the chair next to her.

Sui Hui didn't like the way Lu Lijun treated Zhi Ruo. She intentionally let Zhi Ruo sit in that chair as it was near to Lu Qiang', so she said, "Let her sit there. What's the big deal, if she sits in that chair?"

Upon hearing it nobody said anything as they didn't want to spoil the atmosphere. Also, Zhi Ruo already sat in another chair so there was no point to stretch it, but who could stop Lu Lijun and he spoke while looking at Su Hui, "It is a big deal aunt Su Hui. It's exactly like, me sitting in grandfather's chair."

Lu Lijun then moved his sight from Su Hui to Jiang Yuyan while still holding her hand and said in a commanding way, "Sit in your place." She obeyed and sat in her chair without a single word. It was like, Lu Qiang was ordering her to do so.

When Lu Lijun said it, everyone looked at him. It showed, how much importance he gave to Jiang Yuyan. Jiang Yuyan herself was shocked as she thought, she was in a dream. Something like this never happened when Lu Lijun took stand for someone else except for his elder brother. Su Hui didn't talk much as she knew it was not a good idea to mess up with this little guy as he was pampered by Lu Qiang himself.

Lu Qiang still didn't come back and they started the dinner. After a while, Su Hui spoke again to look at Elder Lu, "Father, My cousin and Zhi Ruo's father Zhi Guang wants to marry his daughter to the son of our family and he was expecting it to be Lu Qiang."

Upon hearing it, most of the people on the dining table who knew about the relationship between Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan were shocked and they looked at Jiang Yuyan. Jiang Yuyan too was shocked to hear it, but didn't show it on her face and continued eating quietly.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were aware that she must be shocked to hear it but couldn't do anything at the moment but to wait for Lu Qiang to come back soon. The same thing applied to the elder couple and Lu Qiang's parents. They too were thought if Lu Qiang could come back soon.

Elders couldn't say 'No' to what Su Hui said as Zhi Ruo was there and she might feel offended. Also, Zhi Guang was a very important person and disrespecting him or his daughter was not the best idea at the moment by considering the fact, how he stood beside Lu Qiang like a strong pillar during their downfall. They thought to leave this matter in Lu Qiang's hands but these people forgot, someone was there, whom no one could stop, Lu Lijun.

Lu Lijun stood up from his chair and said while moving to his brother's chair, "Aunt Su Hui, brother won't say Yes' for this marriage ever" and he sat in Lu Qiang's chair.

Su Hui felt annoyed to hear it from Lu Lijun when elders were not saying anything. She said, "Lu Lijun, leave this to elders to decide. You are still too young to understand these things."

"Might be, but old enough to understand what my brother wants." Lu Lijun said it as serving the food in Jiang Yuyan's dish. It was clear for others what Lu Lijun was pointing towards. In their hearts, they felt proud of Lu Lijun, as he did what they couldn't. He was a kid, so no one could feel offended with his words but enough to convey the important message.

Lu Lijun picked up one beef piece in his chopsticks, served it into Jiang Yuyan's dish and said, "Eat this. You look weak."

While others were happy, Su Hui felt bitter to see how Lu Lijun was taking care of Jiang Yuyan while Zhi Ruo had no idea, what was going on. Su Hui couldn't stop herself and said, "It looks like, in future, you are going to take a place of Lu Qiang by pushing him aside." What she said, was not the good thing to say it. All felt annoyed and Lu Feng was about to stop his mother but a voice stopped him.

"He doesn't have to push me away. Everything, that I have and I will have in the future, belongs to him only and he would be

the next king of this family, aunt Su Hui.” That was Lu Qiang who saw what happened there when he just came back and decided not to meddle until there was a need for him to do it. He was listening to everything while standing outside of the door of the dining room and others were unaware of it. He was happy about what his younger brother said and felt proud too.

Before Su Hui could say anything further, Lu Chen stopped her and said, “Enough now Su Hui.” Lu Chen was aware of his wife’s nature so he preferred to stop her before she could say anything bitter. Elder Lu finally spoke, “Let’s eat in peace. We can discuss these things later.” and everyone obeyed it.

When Lu Qiang reached the dining table, Lu Lijun was ready to get up from Lu Qiang’s chair but Lu Qiang stopped him and said, “In my absence, this chair belongs to you only and you have to take care of someone too.”

Lu Lijun knew who that ‘Someone’ was and nodded as saying ‘Yes!’ Lu Qiang sat in Lu Lijun’s chair and continued to eat. Lu Lijun too continued his dinner while taking care of Jiang Yuyan by serving food in her dish in between.

Lu Qiang, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were looking at Lu Lijun with smiles on their faces for what he said a while ago and what he was doing at that moment. It was like, others had to take care of him always but this time he was taking care of someone.

191 Always Protecting Yuyan...

After Dinner, everyone came to the living room. Lu Jinhai called Lu Qiang out from there as he had something important to discuss with him and asked to follow him to his study room. Jiang Yuyan too heard what Lu Jinhai said and decided to back to her room as Lu Qiang won't be in the living room.

Lu Qiang signaled Jiang Yuyan that he will be back soon which nobody could notice but was enough to convey his message to her. Then he left with his father. As Jiang Yuyan moved to go back to her room, but elder Lu called her and asked her to sit with him for a while as he didn't get a chance to talk to her since yesterday morning.

When Jiang Yuyan stayed back in the living room, Lu Lijun too stayed back because Lu Qiang was not there and he was worried his bitter mouth aunt Su Hui might say something to Jiang Yuyan which could hurt her. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were about to leave to go out to the garden but they stopped to hear what Su Hui said to Grandma Zhao Shuang.

“Mother, as you know, Zhi Ruo is going to stay here in Lu Mansion, so I think, we should make the best arrangements for her as she is very special to us.” Su Hui said it and looked at Jiang Yuyan who was not paying attention to what Su Hui was saying as she was busy talking to elder Lu.

Zhi Ruo was sitting beside Su Hui and said, “There is no need to trouble yourself, aunt Su Hui, I am fine with anything as I am not going to stay here for long.”

Su Hui looked at Zhi Ruo with her eyes wide open and said, “What are you saying Zhi Ruo. You are”

“Su Hui is right. You are our guest and also Zhi Guang's daughter, so it's our duty to provide you with everything best.” Grandma Zhao Shuang said before Su Hui could finish what she was about to say.

Everyone in the living room was aware of what Su Hui was going to say as she had a full plan to make Zhi Ruo, a daughter-in-law of Lu mansion, so grandma Zhao Shuang stopped her before she could say anything inappropriate in front of Jiang Yuyan. Though elder Lu was talking to Jiang Yuyan, he heard what Su Hui said and he too was upset with what Su Hui was trying to do.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang were aware that aunt Su Hui was going to mess up the things. Jiang Yuyan was sitting silently there beside Lu Lijun while elder Lu was regretting to stop Jiang Yuyan, from going into her room.

As the elder Lu was about to ask Jiang Yuyan to go back to her room, just then something clicked in Su Hui's mind again and she said, "Mother you are right. We should definitely give the best to Zhi Ruo so why don't we make her stay arrangement in the room on the second floor, beside Lu Qiang's room? That room is the best one in the whole Lu Mansion."

Upon hearing it Jiang Yuyan who was sitting there silently, looked at aunt Su Hui as she was stunned to hear it. Others too were shocked to hear it. Ning Jiahui couldn't stop herself and finally said, "Su Hui, you already know that Jiang Yuyan is staying in that room so how can you...."

Before Ning Jiahui could complete her sentence, Su Hui spoke as ignoring what Ning Jiahui was saying, "So What elder sister? After two years of university, Jiang Yuyan is going to leave this mansion. It's not like she is going to stay here forever." Su Hui then looked at Jiang Yuyan and asked, "Am I right Jiang Yuyan?"

Jiang Yuyan was startled with this sudden question and it was a bit insulting for her, what Su Hui said. Before Jiang Yuyan or others could say anything to this rude woman, Lu Lijun spoke after placing his palm on the back side of Jiang Yuyan's palm which was resting on her thigh on Lu Lijun's side.

"Aunt Su Hui, don't forget, that room belongs to me, to start with so only I have a right to decide who will stay in that room and my decision is Yuyan. Other than her no one is allowed to enter in that room, not even my mother." When he said it, his

expression and voice were calm but in his eyes, there was hidden anger which he was trying to suppress.

Jiang Yuyan was again surprised to see how Lu Lijun always tried to protect her and felt glad about it, but when he put his palm on her hand, she could feel the normally placed palm of Lu Lijun later gripped her hand tightly as he was speaking to his aunt.

She could feel something was not right and thought he might be angry but in contradiction to her assumption, his expressions were normal. As she was sitting beside him, she couldn't see his eyes properly so she was confused to see what was it? Why he reacted that way?

Lu Feng who was standing a bit away from the sofa with Jiang Yang beside him, didn't fail to notice Lu Lijun's eyes and exclaimed in a voice that only Jiang Yang could hear, "F**k! This is not a good sign. I need to stop this woman or something might happen, that nobody would like to see."

"Woman?" Jiang Yang asked in a surprise.

Lu Feng sighed and replied, "Yes! that woman over there, who is, unfortunately, my mother."

Jiang Yang was shocked to see how Lu Feng was calling his mother and said, "Why are you...."

Jiang Yang remembered, in the past how much Lu Feng used to love his mother and they used to call him a mama's boy. Then, what had changed after all these years? He was in his thoughts and Lu Feng pulled him out of it.

"Don't ask anything, Jiang Yang. First, let's stop this and take Lu Lijun and Yuyan away from here." Lu Feng said it while stepping towards them and spoke when he reached to the sofa, "Lu Lijun is right and his decision is always the final one here, even Lu Qiang won't say no to him." He then looked at his mother and said, "So, stop this right now as there are so many empty rooms in this mansion. Mother."

Elder Lu Felt glad as Lu Feng came to stop his mother and sided with Li Lijun. Elder Lu wanted to shut her mouth by

nice scolding but the presence of Zhi Ruo was stopping him and others too.

Zhi Ruo smiled to hear what Lu Feng said and replied, “Brother Lu Feng is right. I don’t think it’s a good idea to move Jiang Yuyan somewhere else as it would be more convenient if I move into an empty room.”

Su Hui didn’t look happy to hear it and said, “But...”

Zhi Ruo stopped Su Hui and said with a smile on her face, “Trust me, aunt, I am really fine. Thanks for caring for me. Now show me my room, I am tired and sleepy too,”

Su Hui finally agreed and said, “Okay!” Then she asked butler Xu Dui to prepare one room on the first floor, in a south wing for Zhi Ruo.

Lu Feng felt relieved to see, Lu Lijun was normal and his eyes looked calm. Jiang Yang was thinking, why Lu Feng was this much worried about a simple argument between these people but ignored it as he thought, it was nothing.

After seeing, Zhi Ruo was going to be in another room and aunt Su Hui agreed to it too, Lu Lijun let go of Jiang Yuyan’s hand. Jiang Yuyan looked at her hand and felt it was hurting a little. She thought, ‘How can he had such a strong grip. It was not a normal thing. Was he really angry or what?’

While thinking about it, She continued to look at him but his face was expressionless which made her feel even more confused. She had a doubt since she came to Lu mansion, that Lu Lijun is not what he looked from outside. There is more behind this innocent looking face, but what?

192 Jealous..

At the same time in the study room of Lu Jinhai.

After Lu Qiang signaled Jiang Yuyan that he would be back soon, he followed his father to his study room. Lu Jinhai noticed when Lu Qiang signaled her and he smiled. On the way to the study, Lu Jinhai was walking ahead with Lu Qiang following him.

Lu Jinhai suddenly said, “Don’t worry, I won’t take your much time of yours so that you won’t keep your woman waiting.” Lu Qiang didn’t say anything, just had a pleasant smile on his face and followed his father.

Lu Jinhai sat in his chair while Lu Qiang sat on the sofa. Lu Jinhai looked worried and asked, “How are we going to deal with the matter of Zhi Ruo as we know you are not going to marry her.”

“When you know my answer already, then why are you worried, father?” Lu Qiang asked with calm expressions on his face as he was not worried about it at all.

Lu Jinhai said again, “It’s not that simple Lu Qiang. We can’t offend Zhi Guang. I am not worried about a business relationship, as, for me, family comes first. I am just worried to think, how he helped you and what he did to support Lu Corporation after my accident. We owe him for that and we can’t behave like ungrateful people now.”

Lu Qiang agreed to what his father said. “You are right, father. Leave it to me. If something happens, I will take all the responsibility.” He replied.

“Okay! I trust you.” Lu Jinhai then thought about something and asked, “How is Jiang Yuyan now?”

His sudden question startled Lu Qiang, “Huh?”

Lu Jinhai smiled with one corner of his lips curved up and said, “Don’t forget my son, I am still the chairman of Lu

corporation and I get updates even a small bird enter inside the office building.”

Lu Qiang nodded and said, “She is fine now, just a bit in an off mood.”

“Women are like that during this time, but it’s fine.” Lu Jinhai said while going through few documents on the table.

This reply from His father surprised Lu Qiang and he was about to ask, how he knew about what happened to Jiang Yuyan just then he got his answer and that was, Doctor Tan, so he didn’t ask.

Lu Jinhai continued, “You don’t know how much tantrums I had to handle from your mother. Only God can save us when the woman whom we love most, has mood swings and we can’t even get angry with her...sigh..”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear it and said, “Hmm! Right!”

After discussing a few more things, both went back to the living room and saw everyone was there but the atmosphere looked tensed. Lu Feng was standing near the sofa with Jiang Yang beside him. Lu Qiang went there and looked at them with questioning sight. Lu Feng said in a low voice, “Just managed to control volcano before it could explode.”

Upon hearing it, Lu Qiang looked at Lu Lijun, who looked calm so he gave out a sigh of relief. He noticed Jiang Yuyan was rubbing her hand with a confused expression on her face. When she saw Lu Qiang came back she smiled but controlled it before others could notice it.

When Zhi Ruo saw Lu Qiang, she got up from a sofa and said, “Lu Qiang I need your some time, if you don’t mind.” Lu Qiang nodded and said, “What is it?”

“Not here, it’s something personal.”

Upon hearing it, Jiang Yuyan was stunned again as this woman wanted to talk to her man about her personal things and that too in alone. Lu Qiang looked at Jiang Yuyan and noticed it and it was an obvious reaction from her as she was already feeling jealous with Zhi Ruo. Lu Qiang decided to explain things to Jiang Yuyan, later and first said ‘Yes’ to what Zhi

Ruo asked for. He moved away from there towards the mansion door as to say they can talk there.

Zhi Ruo followed Lu Qiang and said, “How about we go out towards the garden?”

Lu Qiang nodded again and left to the garden with Zhi Ruo. Lu Lijun looked at Jiang Yuyan and said in a low voice, “Trust elder brother.” Jiang Yuyan replied with “Hmm” to what Lu Lijun said and was ready to go to her room. Elder Lu heard, what Lu Lijun said and spoke in a low volume, “Lu Lijun is right dear.” Jiang Yuyan nodded to look at elder Lu.

Su Hui was happy to see that Lu Qiang and Zhi Ruo was going to spend time together and said, “Zhi Ruo is a very smart and beautiful girl and perfectly suit our Lu Qiang. I am sure in no time, she will capture his heart.”

Lu Lijun was about to say something but this time, Jiang Yuyan placed her palm on his hand and stopped him. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang saw it and they too felt, Jiang Yuyan did right. Elder Lu asked everyone to go back to their rooms as it was late. Jiang Yuyan went to her room and waited for Lu Qiang. An hour passed by but he didn't come back. She was feeling anxious to think what these two might be talking.

She went to the gallery to get fresh air as those thoughts were suffocating her. When she went to the gallery and stood near the railing, she saw, Lu Qiang and Zhi Ruo were coming back from the garden while Zhi Ruo still talking about something. Jiang Yuyan couldn't help but feel jealous. She knew, she didn't have to feel like that as she trusted Lu Qiang too much but still she couldn't stop herself from it. Jiang Yuyan went inside, turned off all the lights and slept after deciding not to wait for Lu Qiang.

In Lu Feng's room, Jiang was sitting in a chair with a worried expression on his face. To look at him, Lu Feng said, “Don't worry about Yuyan. Lu Qiang won't do anything that might hurt her ever,”

Jiang Yang sighed and said, “You are taking me in a wrong my dear friend,”

“Then, what is it?” Lu Feng asked curiously.

“I am worried about Lu Qiang as he might have to suffer the wrath of my sister. Really a bad timing when she is not in a better mood.” He said and smiled teasingly to which Lu Feng smiled too.

193 Harsh Words...

Lu Qiang came back to Jiang Yuyan's room after having a conversation with Zhi Ruo. when he opened the door of her room, the room was dark and even the night lamp was off too. Lu Qiang went inside and turned on a night lamp. In that mild light, he saw, Jiang Yuyan was sleeping on a bed. He slept beside her and asked, "Are you asleep?" but there was no reply from her.

Lu Qiang was aware, she must be angry and he had to clear the things. He wanted to explain her everything at that moment but he thought to let her sleep as she needed to rest. He decided to talk to her in the morning and slept too after saying, "Good Night, Yuyan."

Jiang Yuyan was not sleeping, she just didn't want to talk to him right at that moment as it might lead to the fight and she was worried, he won't be able to sleep properly and he needed rest as he worked the whole day and must be tired.

Both fell asleep, feeling worried about each other's need of rest being unaware of the fact, what was going to come the next morning.

The next morning, when Lu Qiang opened his eyes, he saw, Jiang Yuyan was not in a bed. He sat up and searched for her. He realized, she must be in the bathroom. As he was about to get out of the bed, Jiang Yuyan came out from the bathroom in a sky blue color knee-length simple flare dress.

She ignored him and straight away went to the mirror. She looked like, she had a shower as her hair was wet. Lu Qiang immediately stepped out of the bed and went to Jiang Yuyan who was standing in front of a mirror with a towel in her hands. He gave her a back hug while resting his chin on her shoulder and said, "You are looking fresh and pretty."

Jiang Yuyan didn't reply to his loving words and just said, "Let me dry my hair." Lu Qiang took a towel from her hands

and said, "Let me help you." He knew she was still upset so he tried to calm her down by acting sweet.

"No need! I can do it by myself. You can go and give your precious time to the girl, you are going to marry soon." She sounded cold. Then, she moved away from him to get a blow dryer to dry her hair.

Lu Qiang used the towel in his hands to dry her hair and said with a smile on his face, while again ignoring her cold behavior, "I am already doing that, as I am with you."

"But now you have to stop it, as Zhi Ruo might feel bad to see you are in my room, so stop coming here and give your time to her, just as you did last night by taking her to the garden." She said it in one long breath and turned on the blow dryer.

Last night, Jiang Yuyan didn't say anything but that made her speak bitter things as it was like the eruption of a volcano in her heart. She might not have said all this, but the jealousy was the culprit, plus her mood swings as a bonus.

Lu Qiang was able to understand, her behavior was normal as he was at fault, so he tried to maintain his calmness and tried to calm her down too. He turned off the switch of blow dryer as it's noise was a disturbance and said, "It's not what you are thinking, Yuyan. Let me explain to you things."

"I told you no need. Your aunt wants you to marry a beautiful and talented girl and I can see, Zhi Ruo is the one. So stop fooling around with me and go to her." she said it and moved her hand towards the switch to turn on the blow dryer again. Whatever Su Hui said, hurt Jiang Yuyan a lot but at that moment she couldn't say anything to her and that anger on Su Hui, she was taking out on Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang held her hand midway to stop her from turning on the blow dryer and said, "Forget about my aunt. What matters is, what we want."

Jiang Yuyan pulled her hand back and said, "Right! And I want you to marry Zhi Ruo, as she suits you more,"

"Don't be like this Yuyan, I know you are upset but let me explain something first."

“I don’t want to hear anything so just leave my room as it’s not good for you to stay here. Oh wait, why don’t we shift Zhi Ruo in this room as your aunt wants it and it would be convenient for you too.”

“Yuyan stop it. Forget My aunt and Zhi Ruo. Hear me first.” Lu Qiang was losing his calmness but still was trying to hold himself back from saying anything harsh.

“What do you want to tell me, that what you did with her in the garden for one hour. I am not interested. You are free to marry her. So, do what you feel good. I don’t care.”

More Lu Qiang was talking softly more she was getting harsher. Lu Qiang pinched the space between his eyebrows as she was angry and she was not ready to listen to him. He sighed and said, “So, you don’t care if I marry her.”

“Yes! I don’t care” she replied and kept the blow dryer back without drying her hair.

Lu Qiang held her hand and turned her towards him to look in her eyes and said, “Say it, while looking into my eyes.”

Jiang Yuyan looked into his eyes and said in a firm voice, “I don’t care.”

Lu Qiang didn’t expect her to say it like this without hesitating for even a moment. He was stunned and felt hurt to hear it and said while still holding her hand, “You know very well that I love you and how I waited for you all these years.”

“That is your problem and also, I never asked you to wait for me,” Jiang Yuyan replied again to look at him without realizing what she was doing.

Lu Qiang still tried to be calm and asked while looking into her eyes, hoping to see a little comfort, “But You love me too.”

“When did I say that?” she asked without batting an eye.

“That night you confessed to me,” he asked as to think she might remember it and will accept it.

“I told you already, that you were drunk and might have seen the things.” She replied.

“Hmm! And what about the things happened between us, those kisses and those.....”

“Those are nothing as it’s normal to get attracted towards the person you spend your time with. It’s normal human behavior.” Jiang Yuyan said before Lu Qiang could recite the whole list of their intimate moments between them.

“I was seeing the things as I was drunk. Hmm! Attraction and normal human behavior?..... Okay! I understood.” Lu Qiang said it and left the room with bang sound of the door closing.

194 Angry Lu Qiang....

Upon hearing the loud sound of the door closing, Jiang Yuyan's heart beats fastened as with it, she could feel the level of Lu Qiang's anger. She somewhat felt guilty about what she said and felt bad. She calmed herself down and recalled whatever she said to Lu Qiang. She knew, she was wrong but didn't want to understand it, as she kept recalling what aunt Su Hui said and how Zhi Ruo asked Lu Qiang to go out in alone and he agreed to that. Not only agreed but spent more than one hour with her.

After some time, she got ready to go downstairs for breakfast. When she reached downstairs everyone was there but Lu Qiang. Her heart almost skipped a beat, not to see him there as he always used to present, whenever she came for breakfast. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang too came downstairs and saw, Jiang Yuyan was standing near the stairs instead of going to the living room and upon seeing her sad face, Jiang Yang asked, "He didn't come for breakfast."

Jiang Yuyan shook her head as saying 'No'. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang looked at each other because they understood what they were thinking last night finally happened, these two lovers finally fought. Lu Feng patted her head and said, "Don't be sad, he will come for breakfast." Just then, Lu Qiang came downstairs.

When Jiang Yuyan saw him, she gave out a deep sigh. She was looking at him but he didn't look at her or anyone else in there and straight walked towards the dining room. All were surprised to see this as Lu Qiang didn't say a single word or wished good morning to anyone and went to the dining room. Something like this never happened before.

Others too went to the dining room. Lu Feng looked at Jiang Yuyan and said, "Let's go." Jiang Yang held her hand and took her to the dining room. These both were aware that she was feeling hurt because of the way Lu Qiang acted. On the way to the dining room, suddenly Jiang Yang asked in a low voice,

“Were you too harsh with him last night.” Lu Feng too heard it and was looking at her. She nodded her head but didn’t say a single word.

“Aaaha! Sis, your mood swings,” Jiang Yang said and patted her head.

Lu Feng put a hand on Jiang Yang’s shoulder and said, “It is not her mood swing. It is her reaction to that woman’s harsh words and jealousy with Zhi Ruo.”

Jiang Yuyan didn’t react to this and all three too went to the dining room. Lu Qiang was sitting there with serious expressions on his face. Nobody said a single word and quietly sat on their chairs. Jiang Yuyan sat in her chair beside Lu Qiang who was going through his phone. Lu Lijun was sitting there too but he was silent like others. Servant served the food without any noise as they too could feel the cold atmosphere in the room and especially around Lu Qiang. Once it was done, all started breakfast.

After a while, Jiang Yang whispered in Lu Feng’s ear and said to look at Lu Qiang, “I think my sister went overboard last night”

“It’s not only her fault. He is responsible for it too as he didn’t say anything in her defense.” Lu Feng replied while whispering and looked at Jiang Yuyan who was silent. He felt sad for her as his mother was the reason for all this.

As usual Lu Qiang was serving food to Lu Lijun and Jiang Yuyan too. Though he was angry and upset with her, he didn’t fail to do what he always did while eating. Everything was normal and calm but suddenly Su Hui spoke.

“Lu Qiang, I think you should get married now. We all are eagerly waiting to see your wife in this house. She then looked at Zhi Ruo and said again, “We have so many beautiful and talented girls around like Zhi Ruo so don’t wait to choose the best one.”

Lu Qiang didn’t reply to what his aunt and continued eating. Others too didn’t say anything and just looked at Lu Qiang to see how he will react. Jiang Yuyan looked at him and she saw he

had no expression on his face and was focused on eating like he didn't hear what Su Hui said. She could feel the coldness in his behavior which scared her.

Lu Feng sighed and murmured, "God, this woman. What can I do with her?" Jiang Yang heard it. He didn't know what was Lu Feng's problem with his mother but till now, what he observed about Su Hui, he found her mischievous.

Upon getting no response from Lu Qiang, Su Hui asked again, "Lu Qiang did you hear what I said." Other family members thought everything was fine, but as they heard Su Hui again, they were almost ready with their hands on the hearts and happened exactly what they were scared about.

Upon hearing the second question from Su Hui, Lu Qiang closed his eyes for a moment in annoyance, took a deep breath as he was trying to control from being harsh but he couldn't. He put down the chopsticks in his hands on the dining table with the sound 'Thadd' then looked at aunt Su Hui in her eyes and said, "This is my f**king life so no one is allowed to think or decide anything about it and to advise me what I should do or not. With whom I will marry, it's totally my choice, so stay out of it."

Everyone almost choked with these words from Lu Qiang as he never talked like this to his family members ever but the way Su Hui acted, they didn't feel bad for her. Su Hui almost got the shock of her life and was in a daze.

Lu Qiang stood up from his chair and said, "Lu Feng, drop Yuyan and Lu Lijun to their schools today." He then looked at Zhi Ruo and said, "Zhi Ruo, Let's go."

Zhi Ruo looked at him in shock and said, "Me? Where?"

"Didn't you say last night you want to come to my office," he replied with the same cold expressions on his face.

Zhi Ruo had confused expressions on her face but got up and followed Lu Qiang quietly. Expressions on Jiang Yuyan's face were worse that she almost felt like crying but controlled herself. Jiang Yang and Lu Feng too felt bad for her as they thought, Lu Qiang did wrong again by taking Zhi Ruo with

him. Lu Lijun noticed Jiang Yuyan's sad face and said, "Yuyan, Let's go. We are getting late too." Jiang Yuyan nodded to it and got up. Lu Feng and Jiang Yang too followed them.

When they reached the living room, they saw Lu Qiang left already. Jiang Yang hugged his sister and said, "Don't worry, he loves you a lot but he is just angry right now so give him some time to cool down."

Lu Feng too agreed to what Jiang Yang said. "Jiang Yang is right so don't think much. He would be fine soon."

All this time, Jiang Yuyan didn't speak a single word. She was listening and nodding to what others were saying to her.

195 An Old Friend...

When Lu Qiang and Zhi Ruo reached Lu Qiang's car outside of Lu mansion's door, the driver opened the back passenger seat door for him but Lu Qiang straight strode towards the driver seat door, opened it and sat on the driver seat. The driver understood, Lu Qiang was going to drive by himself so he moved away from the car. Zhi Ruo sat in the front passenger seat and Lu Qiang drove away.

After sometime when Jiang Yuyan and the other three came out from the mansion, they saw, Lu Qiang's driver was talking with the servant in the mansion. They were surprised to see the driver so, Lu Feng went to him and asked, "Why are you here, where is Lu Qiang?"

"President Lu took the car and went out, driving by himself."
Driver answered.

Upon hearing it, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang didn't know what to say and just looked at Jiang Yuyan. She averted her sight from them and said, "Let's go. We are getting late."

Jiang Yang asked her to sit in his car and said, "I will drop you today." Jiang Yang knew she was not showing it on her face but she was hurt so he preferred to be with her to make her feel better. Even though it won't be that effective on what she was feeling at that moment but he didn't feel right to leave her alone and go back. He was feeling sad too, to see her like this but he was sure that they both can handle this matter and wanted to trust Lu Qiang.

In Lu Qiang's car..

"Finally, there is someone who could melt this iceberg," Zhi Ruo said with teasing smile on her face.

"Huh?"

"Don't 'Huh?' me. For me, you are not a president Lu, whom everyone is scared of. For me, you are just a Lu Qiang and I am not scared of you."

Lu Qiang still didn't say anything and continued driving. She continued, "I can see the way you look at her and it's too easy to guess, you like her."

"Correction" Suddenly Lu Qiang spoke.

"What?" Zhi Ruo asked curiously.

Lu Qiang replied with a firm voice, "I love her." Finally, he said something that Zhi Ruo wanted to hear. She asked, "Then why did both of you fought? Was it because of me? Didn't you tell her everything?"

The way Lu Qiang behaved since breakfast time and to look at silent Jiang Yuyan, it was not hard for Zhi Ruo to guess that they fought.

Lu Qiang sighed and said, "Women and their mood swings."

Upon hearing the word mood swings, Zhi Ruo asked excitedly, "Tell me what happened or I won't help you with what you are using me for."

"You are thinking too much." Lu Qiang replied coldly while focusing on the driving.

"Weren't you trying to use me to make her feel jealous? really?" She asked but got no reply. "Okay! Next time if you call me in front of her, I won't listen to you" Zhi Ruo spoke again and looked out of the car window while pouting.

Lu Qiang didn't say anything and continued driving. Upon not getting any response from him even if she acted upset, she said, "Okay, don't tell me, but don't expect any help too."

Lu Qiang finally spoke and narrated what happened between them.

"Haha! So you think she fought because of mood swings. The way I can understand and see the things, it's more of jealousy and the bitter words of my aunt." She replied after listening to him and remembering all the things happened since she entered the mansion.

"I know, it was hard for her but I just wanted her to listen, what I wanted to say. If she had listened to me, things would have been easy instead of being like this," he replied.

Zhi Ruo sighed and said, “Men and their ability to not understand women.”

“What do you mean?” Lu Qiang asked as he always thought, he can understand Jiang Yuyan.

“Just try to put yourself in her shoes Lu Qiang. She is already feeling weak and cranky and when it was time for her to come home and rest, she had to face her rival in love and she had to hear the bitter word of aunt Su Hui.” Zhi Ruo thought about all the possibilities that Jiang Yuyan had to face last night.

Lu Qiang nodded as agreeing to what Zhi Ruo said. “I know this Zhi Ruo that’s why I went to her, to console her and to explain the things but things took a different turn.”

Other than his two childhood best friends, Lu Qiang never opened his heart to anyone but he was talking to Zhi Ruo without holding himself back. It was not like he was not able to understand Jiang Yuyan but sometimes a person needs someone who can make him realize the fact.

“It’s not that easy Lu Qiang. She was hurt and what you did just now hurt her even more. Aunt Su Hui asked her to empty her room. If I was her, I wouldn’t be able to take that insult and I would have said, ‘Hey old lady shut your mouth’ and you know, I can do it, right?” she said while feeling bad about what Su Hui did with Jiang Yuyan and as it was her first day in mansion, she preferred to not talk.

I know she was hurt but jealousy? There was no point in that as she knows, I only love her.” he spoke again.

“Jealousy is another side of love. She loves you a lot that’s why she is jealous too and also, she was hurt so you were the only person she could take it out on. As simple as that.” Zhi Ruo was trying her best to let him understand the situation of Jiang Yuyan.

“Hmmm!” Lu Qiang nodded in agreement and Zhi Ruo asked again, “Haven’t you ever felt jealous to see another man near her?”

Lu Qiang suddenly remembered the incident when Ming Rusheng offered Jiang Yuyan to drop her to Lu Mansion and

that night in a fit of anger, he kissed her roughly and even warned her too. Then he understood what Zhi Ruo was trying to say.

“Hmm! I know but if the things turned out this way so I want to use them to turn into something better,” he said after thinking about something.

“And what’s that?” She asked curiously

“Confession of her feelings towards me so that, next time she won’t be able to deny it.” He replied with a mischievous smile on his face.

Lu Qiang and Zhi Ruo shared a good relationship as friends with each other when she was working under Lu Qiang. As usual, Lu Qiang was cold to her in the beginning but soon he realized, Zhi Ruo was not like other girls who tried to get closer to him by using their families. She was one free spirit who loved to enjoy all the things in life. She was a talented and hardworking girl who never used the power of her father for her own benefit. Soon she became friendly with Lu Qiang and worked with him. Even if she met him after a few years, Zhi Ruo was the same, talkative and lively person.

196 Trust...

On the way to the office, when Lu Qiang and Zhi Ruo had done talking about Jiang Yuyan, Lu Qiang said, “After a long time, you are coming to Lu Corporation.”

“Who is going to Lu Corporation? I am not interested in your boring office anymore. I just followed you because I didn’t want to disobey The Great President Lu, in front of others and also, I understood the reason, why you were doing that and wanted to help you.” Zhi Ruo replied while going through her cell phone.

Lu Qiang was not surprised to hear it as he knew what kind of a person Zhi Ruo was so he asked, “Then, where are you planning to go?”

“I am back to this city, after a long time, so I am planning to discover the whole city again. Drop me to any nearby subway,” she replied while going through the map of the city on her mobile to see what are the possible places she could visit again.

“Will you be fine alone? Or I can get a car for you.” He asked, though he knew, there was nothing to worry about her and she won’t ever want it. Zhi Ruo was like this even when she was working under him to learn the business. Most of the time after office hours or even during office hours, she used to go to any place to wander around.

“Nah! Car is boring and I want to enjoy while roaming around here and there freely. Moreover, For some time, I want to forget that I am a daughter and a friend of business tycoons. Give me some space from these royalties.” Zhi Ruo said and was ready to go on her own.

“Hmm!” Lu Qiang nodded and dropped her nearby subway. Just Zhi Ruo was about to step down from the car, she stopped then looked at Lu Qiang and said with a serious expression on her face, “Don’t forget you have to help me with my problem. Last night I explained to you everything so don’t forget it.”

“Let’s see!” Lu Qiang replied casually.

Upon hearing his casual reply to her serious question, she exclaimed, “What? I came to you without even giving a second thought, because you are the only one I could trust and the only one who can help me and you are saying ‘let’s see’. If you won’t help me, I will drug you and take ‘Umm” kind of pics with you in a bed and show it to everyone and the first one to receive it would be your woman.”

Lu Qiang smiled to hear the last lines and said, “Okay! I will help you. Enough of scaring me.”

“That’s good. At least you know when to feel scared.” Zhi Ruo said and jumped out of the car.

Jiang Yang dropped Jiang Yuyan at university. “How about you come to our home for a few days?”

Jiang Yuyan was silent all this time while immersed in her own thoughts. She looked lost. When Jiang Yang said it she hugged him and said, “I want to go to our home brother.” As she said it, tears rolled down from her eyes. “I want to be with you. I...” she couldn’t say anything further and started to cry.

Jiang Yang was aware, even she had everything in Lu Mansion, somewhere she must be missing her home. After what happened in the morning, Jiang Yang wanted to take her home, where she can rest as she was already feeling weak. In Lu mansion, Lu Qiang was everything for her but after the fight between them, it was necessary that someone be on her side. Also, he wanted to take her away from the stressful atmosphere in Lu mansion as Su Hui had been back to the Mansion. From what Jiang Yang observed, he understood, Su Hui didn’t like Jiang Yuyan that much and could create trouble for her.

Just then Lu Feng arrived there, after dropping Lu Lijun to the school. He saw Jiang Yuyan was crying and felt bad as his mother was the reason for it. Lu Feng apologized to her saying, “I am sorry that my mother hurt you.”

Once Jiang Yuyan stopped crying, Jiang Yang asked if she wanted to miss class for a day and take a break but Jiang

Yuyan said No and she was ready to go for her classes, just then, Jiang Yang saw Nixxie, who was going inside and she didn't notice they were standing there, Jiang Yang called her, "Hey! Miss Stranger,"

Nixxie heard him and asked, "Me?"

Jiang Yuyan and Lu Feng were surprised to see, whom he was calling like this suddenly and both looked in the direction of where Jiang Yang was looking.

"Well, who could it be other than you?" he replied to Nixxie.

Nixxie felt annoyed but when she saw Jiang Yuyan, she walked towards them and asked to look at Jiang Yang, "What?"

"Take care of my sister today." He replied.

Nixxie looked at Jiang Yuyan and noticed her swollen face and understood, she was not okay. Nixxie didn't say anything to Jiang Yang and said to look at Jiang Yuyan, "Let's go, girl. We are getting late."

Once both of them left, Lu Feng asked, "Who is she?"

"Just as I called her, a stranger." Jiang Yang replied with a smile on his face.

"Seems like you have taken interest in this stranger." Lu Feng asked with a smile on his face too.

"Well, you can say that." he replied and looked in the direction of retreating back of Nixxie.

"So are you taking Yuyan to home?" Lu Feng asked.

Jiang Yang gave out a deep sigh and said, "Hmm! I think I should."

"Do that then, just need to handle the devil. Don't know how he will react to see when Yuyan would not be in Lu mansion." Lu Feng said being worried about Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan.

"I know but he will understand. I will inform him. She needs to rest and for him, nothing is more important than her," Jiang Yang said and sounded worried too.

“Hmmm! I am sure he is up to something as he never behaves like it”

Jiang Yang nodded and said, “I think so too. But to know what, first I need to know what exactly happened between these two.”

“Right! Take care of her. If there is something call me.” Lu Feng said and moved to his car.

“Lu Feng,” Jiang Yang called him.

Lu Feng turned back to know why Jiang Yang called him, “Hmm?”

Jiang Yang asked, “Where do you always go for the whole day. I mean what you do?”

“I too have a work to do, my friend.” Lu Feng replied with a mild smile on his face.

Jiang Yang asked again, “That’s what I want to know. What work.”

“I will tell you in the future. Till then just know that I am doing something good.” Lu Feng replied and sat in his car. He said bye to Jiang Yang and left.

Jiang Yang was looking at Lu Feng’s car which was disappearing from his sight and said, “I trust you. You can’t do anything bad, ever.” Jiang Yang sat in his car and left too.

197 Missing...

In the evening, Jiang Yang took Jiang Yuyan to Jiang residence. He already informed Lu Qiang about it and he too allowed Jiang Yang to take her with him as he knew, she needed a proper rest and in Lu Mansion in the presence of his aunt Su Hui, she might suffer in her weak condition. Also, Zhi Ruo was going to stay in Lu Mansion for a while so it was better for Jiang Yuyan to stay away from everything.

When Jiang Yuyan reached Jiang residence she felt relaxed like a bird came out from its cage. She came back to her room after a long time and was happy to be there. She rested for a while and went downstairs after getting freshen up. Jiang Yang was already present there and when he saw her, he smiled and asked her to sit beside him.

“Are you feeling better now? Still having cramps?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Nope, It’s fine now,” Jiang Yuyan replied and sat on the sofa.

It was going to be dinner time soon so Jiang Yang asked, “What would you like to have for dinner,”

“Anything will do brother. Whatever you decide,” she replied.

“You are looking relaxed and your face has brightened up a little. Were you not comfortable there?” Jiang Yang asked while observing her face. He knew, when Lu Qiang was there, he didn’t have to worry about her but still, he asked.

“It’s not like I was not comfortable but these past few days were stressful,” she replied with sad expressions on her face to remember what happened.

“Hmm! I know. First, both of you fought because you didn’t want him to spend the night in your room. Then, both of you fought because of Zhi Ruo.”

“Why are you making it sound like both the time I fought with him.” Jiang Yuyan asked and she knew he was right.

“Isn’t it true?” Jiang Yang asked which made her feel guilty but she collected her thoughts and said, “Yes, I fought because he doesn’t understand what I was going through.”

“Hmm! I see. Tell me what happened last night and then only I can think, what you are saying is right.” he said with the anticipation of getting an honest reply from her.

Jiang Yuyan nodded and narrated an incident from the last night in detail. He heard everything and understood where it went wrong.

“You are too young Yuyan. All these things, which are happening are going to teach you something each time. I know you were greatly affected by aunt Su Hui’s words and the sudden appearance of a new girl just to get married to Lu Qiang but you have to trust him too. I am sure, till now you have realized that it would be better if you had listened to him,” he said while looking into her eyes.

Jiang Yuyan felt sad to hear it and said, “I trust him, brother and I know, I should have listened to him but at that time, I don’t know what happened to me and I just couldn’t control myself from venting all out on him. I know, I was wrong and I should have listened to him first but I didn’t.”

“It’s okay! It happens in a relationship, it’s normal to vent everything on the person we love because we know that person will understand us whatever we do but we should sort it out soon too.” Jiang Yang said while trying to comfort her too as he didn’t want to blame her or anything.

“I wanted to. I decided to talk to him on the way to the university but he left. What can I do now? He didn’t even call me once,” she said while looking at her mobile.

“Did you try to call him?” Jiang Yuyan shook her head to hear it and she understood what her brother was trying to imply and said, “I didn’t as I was scared to see him angry in the morning.”

“Hmm! You should be the last person to feel scared of him. Don’t worry, both of you need some time to cool down so just take your time to think about it properly and sort it out then.

“Hmm!”

“Let’s go out for dinner today. I will treat you to something nice.”

Jiang Yang didn’t want to stretch the topic more as he brought her back to keep her away from those stressful things. Jiang Yuyan nodded and both went out.

In Lu mansion, Lu Qiang came back from work in the evening. He went to the second floor to his room. When he reached the second floor, instead of going to his room, he went to Jiang Yuyan’s room. He went inside and missed her presence in the room. He wanted to call her so many times in a day but he controlled himself as this time he had something planned and he decided not to be soft to her anymore and went back to his room.

During dinner, on the dining table, everyone was calm as Lu Qiang was in a serious mood. Aunt Su Hui didn’t dare to look at him after what happened in the morning. No one said a single word and ate quietly. The elder couple, Lu Qiang’s parents and his two brothers were aware that he must be missing Jiang Yuyan. While dinner, Lu Qiang kept staring at the empty chair of Jiang Yuyan and it was noticed by all of them. He didn’t eat much and went back upstairs as soon as possible.

He didn’t go to his room, instead, he went to Jiang Yuyan’s room and laid down in a bed while missing her presence in the room. He turned to his one side and caressed the side of the mattress with his hands, where Jiang Yuyan sleep whenever they slept together. He missed her too much and was restless all night that he couldn’t sleep properly.

When Jiang Yuyan came back to her room after dinner, she tried to sleep but she couldn’t. She was missing Lu Qiang too, just as he was missing her beside him in bed. She was continuously changing her sides and was not able to sleep like she was sleeping at a new place instead of her own room. Jiang Yuyan knew, she was missing him but couldn’t do anything at the moment.

Once Jiang Yuyan went to her room, Jiang Yang called Lu Feng to get an update about Lu Qiang. "How is he?" he asked.

"He didn't eat properly and the whole time he was just looking at the empty chair of Yuyan. He went to sleep but I think, he went to Yuyan's room instead of his own, as he is missing her." Lu Feng replied.

"She is restless too but this time I don't want to help her to solve this problem. I think we should let them do it on their own," Jiang Yang said again.

"Don't worry Jiang Yang. I am sure he is up to something, otherwise, till now he would have barged into your place and he would have taken her away."

"Hmm! I too thought the same when I saw him in the morning, that's why I have decided to stay out of it." Both talked for some time and cut the call.

198 Waiting...

The next morning, in Lu mansion, Elder Lu informed everyone, on the weekend, all had to go to the city S, for the engagement ceremony of Lu Zhilan's son Wang Peng. Lu Zhilan was the only daughter of Elder Lu. Jiang family was invited too as Lu Zhilan considered Jiang Peizhi like her younger brother just like Lu Jinhai, so elder Lu decided to take Jiang Yuyan and Jiang Yang with them too and he already informed Jiang Yang about it, to which he agreed.

Till weekend, Jiang Yuyan stayed at Jiang residence. In between, Lu Qiang and Jiang Yuyan both didn't call each other. The engagement was on Sunday evening, so all had to leave on Saturday. Flight tickets were ready for all family members and Jiang Siblings too. At the airport, everyone was present except for Lu Qiang as he had decided to come later because he had some business to attend. Jiang Yuyan was disappointed to not see him there.

Lu Feng was not willing to go but as Wang Peng was his cousin and they shared a good bond so he agreed. Also, Jiang Yang was going to attend the ceremony too, so he insisted Lu Feng to join him. Jiang Yang agreed to go just because of Jiang Yuyan and Lu Qiang. He wanted both of them to meet in different circumstances and spend time somewhere away from home but on time Lu Qiang couldn't come.

Suddenly they realized Zhi Ruo was not there too. Just then elder Lu asked Su Hui, "Where is Zhi Ruo?"

"Father, she is busy with something, so she said, she will come by next flight." Su Hui replied with a smile on her face and said again, "She and Lu Qiang might have planned to come together," and looked at Jiang Yuyan.

Upon hearing it, elder Lu looked at Jiang Yuyan who was standing quietly and felt bad for her. Suddenly Lu Jinhai spoke, "Father, Lu Qiang is attending an important meeting with projects from country Z and his presence was must, but

he will come for sure. As for Zhi Ruo, she has some other things to do. She has returned to this city after a long time and you know how she is, always roaming here and there.”

Elder Lu nodded to what Lu Jinhai said. Lu Jinhai was aware that Jiang Yuyan was upset and felt bad for her too.

Lu Feng too felt bad as his mother said something inappropriate again to hurt Jiang Yuyan and said, “Don’t feel sad, Yuyan. Lu Qiang is going to come tomorrow as he has some important work. Don’t look into things too much,” he said and patted her head.

“Lu Feng is right. He is busy so wait for him.” Jiang Yang said.

“It doesn’t matter to me brother. It’s his problem, whether he wants to go there or not.” Jiang Yuyan said with no expression on her face. She was missing Lu Qiang all these days and finally, she was happy to think, she was going to see him. When she heard he was busy, she was fine but upon hearing what aunt Su Hui said, she couldn’t stop herself but feel salty.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang could understand her condition. The man who couldn’t be without seeing her for a second, he didn’t even call her and also, there was a girl whom Su Hui proposed for marriage with Lu Qiang, so it was obvious for her to feel upset. They trusted Lu Qiang but there was no solution to the jealousy of one woman unless the reason for her jealousy vanishes completely.

Finally, it was time for flight and everyone board it. All the time Jiang Yuyan was staring out of the window towards clouds. She didn’t speak a single word thought out the journey of two and a half hours. In the evening, all reached the city S. Cars were ready to pick up everyone from the airport. The venue of the ceremony was the most expensive hotel in the city. Staying arrangement for the guests had been done there too.

Once they reached the hotel, Lu Zhilan was present there with her husband Wang Chao, son Wang Peng and daughter Wang Shu. They welcomed the entire Lu family. Everyone was happy about being together again.

All got their rooms as allotted to them. Jiang Yuyan was alone in her room and was thinking about Lu Qiang all the time. She thought to call him and ask when is he coming but the anger inside her, to think Lu Qiang and Zhi Ruo being together was not letting her do it.

After freshening up Jiang Yang went to his sister's room. "Still thinking about him?"

"Why should I?" she replied annoyingly and sat on the edge of the bed.

Jiang Yang too sat beside her on the edge of the bed and said, "You never mean what you say. I know what you are thinking and I will suggest, don't think too much. You also know how much he loves you and he can never think about anyone else in his life other than you, even if it costs him a fortune."

"I know. But.... Hmm! I don't know. Brother." she was going through different emotions at the same time and she was confused.

"That's why I am saying, Don't think and leave the things on time. Now let's go for dinner," he said and stood up. He offered her his hand and said, "let's go." Jiang Yuyan accepted it and went out of the room with him.

Dinner was arranged in a restaurant in the hotel. It was a huge and luxurious place. Wang family was present there too. Dinner started with all kinds of tasty foods and expensive dishes in the hotel. After dinner, all went to the lawn area of the hotel to chat as they were meeting the Wang family after Elder Lu's wedding anniversary.

"Jiang Yuyan how are you? And how is your study going on?" Lu Zhilan asked to look at her.

"It's going good aunt Lu Zhilan." Jiang Yuyan replied with a smile on her face.

Lu Zhilan then turned her sight to Jiang Yang and asked with the same smile on her face, "And what about you Jiang Yang? Mo Ruolan told me you are doing great here in China too. We have one talented doctor in the family now."

Jiang Yang just smiled and said, "It's going good for me too?"

Lu Zhilan noticed Lu Qiang was not with them but she forgot to ask it before, so she looked at her brother Lu Jinhai and asked, “Where is our handsome president Lu?”

“I am here aunt Lu Zhilan.”

Suddenly, a voice grabbed the attention of everyone. That was Lu Qiang with Zhi Ruo beside him. Lu Zhilan smiled and went to him. “I am glad that you made it.” Lu Qiang smiled at it then looked at Wang Peng who was standing beside his mother and said, “Congrats!”

“Thank you Lu Qiang.” Wang Peng replied. Wang Shu was there too with Lu Bao and Lu Lian. when she saw Lu Qiang with Zhi Ruo, she asked, “Why brother Lu Qiang is with her? I thought, he likes Jiang Yuyan.”

“You are right but we too don’t know what is he doing with her?” Lu Bao replied and Lu Lian nodded.

Lu Zhilan then hugged Zhi Ruo and said, “Nice to see you too. I wish your parents could make it to here too.”

“Nice to see you too, aunt Lu Zhilan. My parents wanted too, but they were busy with something else.” Zhi Ruo replied. She was looking beautiful and a smile on her face made her look even prettier.

“I know and I can understand dear.” Lu Zhilan replied

Everyone was talking but all this time Lu Qiang didn’t look at Jiang Yuyan even for once. After some talk, all the girls went with Wang Shu as she called them to her room. Jiang Yuyan went with them but Zhi Ruo said she had something to do then excused herself and went to her room which was allotted to her.

Lu Qiang then went to Jiang Yang and Lu Feng. “What’s going on man?” Lu Feng asked.

“What?” Lu Qiang replied

“Why did you came with her?” Lu Feng asked again and Jiang Yang too was ready to hear his reply. Both knew Lu Qiang only has eyes for Jiang Yuyan but when they saw Zhi Ruo with him, they wanted to know why?

199 I Am Guilty...

“I didn’t come with Zhi Ruo. I happened to meet her at the airport when I came out of the flight. I didn’t even know she was on the same flight as me. As we both were coming to the same place, I offered to come in my car, That’s it”, Lu Qiang replied casually as it didn’t matter if she came with him or not.

Lu Feng and Jiang Yang didn’t doubt him as they knew, Lu Qiang never did anything in hiding and he never cared about what others will think. Moreover, his love for Jiang Yuyan was something that won’t let them doubt Lu Qiang, so they didn’t ask anything further. To see both of them silent, Lu Qiang spoke again, “Trust me, that girl has no interest in me. She has her own problems and she is busy in handling them.”

“What problem? Is she in any kind of trouble?” Jiang Yang asked.

“Her own personal things which I can’t share with you guys right now, so don’t be affected by her presence here or around me. She trusted me, so she came here to get help from me. Only this much I can tell you guys at this moment.”

“Hmm! No problem, as long as she won’t affect Yuyan and your relationship”, Lu Feng said as he was not interested to know about Zhi Ruo.

“She won’t, Lu Feng.” Lu Qiang replied.

“But why didn’t you look at Yuyan even once? Why were you avoiding to look at her as she was not present here and you were guilty of doing something wrong”, Jiang Yang asked?

Lu Qiang gave out of deep sigh and said, “Yes, I am guilty.”

Upon hearing it, both Lu Feng and Jiang Yang looked at him. Then, Lu Qiang spoke, “I am guilty of hurting her by not being able to explain her all the things. I am guilty of not talking to her or calling her even once for all these days, after our fight, I am guilty of making her feel not being loved by me and i am guilty of not even able to take care of her when she

was not feeling well, instead, I hurt her. I am guilty about so many things and for that, I will apologize to her soon”

Lu Feng and Jiang both continued to be silent as there was nothing they could say because Lu Qiang already said everything. Lu Qiang continued, “And the reason I didn’t look at her because I wouldn’t be able to control myself from going towards her and hug her in front of everyone, after looking at her sad face and moist eyes. I might have kissed her too which she might have not liked, as everyone was here.”

Jiang Yang and Lu Feng were just listening to him as they didn’t want to disturb him from everything he said and the things, he was going to say. They knew, he must have missed her a lot. Lu Qiang looked lost in his thoughts and said, “I didn’t talk to her for these few days and I felt like my heart was empty and I have nothing to do in my life. Everything in my life starts with her and ends with her, so how can I stay away from her even for a single moment. I never thought It would be this much difficult for me to stay away from her.”

“Instead of waiting to see her, outside of her university by hiding yourself, why didn’t you come and talked to her directly. Her condition was exactly like you. Her body was present in the house but her soul was wandering somewhere to look for you.”

“I wanted to whenever I saw her. I wished to run towards her, hold her hand and take her back with me but this time, I don’t want to let it go.” Lu Qiang then looked at both of them and said, “I am sorry.”

Both looked at him in surprise to know, why he said sorry. Lu Qiang said while looking in their eyes, “I am gonna trouble her for some time so already apologizing to both of you.”

“Are you doing this just because she denies, she confessed to you.” Jiang Yang asked

“Hmm! She denied it two times in the fit of anger as giving an excuse, that I was drunk. This time I want her to confess when I am sober and we would be together happily. Enough of this distance now. I don’t want to be away from her even for a

moment but for that, I need to maintain distance with her for some time.” Lu Qiang said with determination in his voice.

“I hope you won’t do anything extreme and make her cry Lu Qiang. I think, we won’t forgive you if you hurt her,” said Lu Feng with a worried expression on his face. Jiang Yang too was worried about his sister. Seeing her hurt, was the last thing he would ever want to see.

“That’s why I said sorry because I am going to hurt her a little but rest assured it would make her happy later. I am planning to give her one more chance. If she still denied it, I would have to do, what I planned for.” Lu Qiang replied to assure them.

They didn’t know what to say and just nodded to give him the approval to do what he planned for. Also, it was something between both of them so they decided to leave it to Lu Qiang and trust him. Jiang Yuyan was as important to both of them as she was to Lu Qiang, so they had a right to think about her well being and the right to take care of her.

Even if, it was Lu Qiang, if these two happened to notice, he is hurting her, they might not think twice before confronting him.

They decided to go back to their rooms as it was late. All had rooms on the same floor. Lu Qiang went in front of his room’s door and asked, “Which one is Yuyan’s room?”

Jiang Yang pointed towards the door, which was exactly opposite to Lu Qiang’s door. Lu Qiang looked at the door just then Zhi Ruo came out of the room, next to Lu Qiang’s room.

“Is it your room?” Lu Qiang asked

“Are you that happy to see me next to your room? I won’t mind if you come to my room in the middle of the night, just make sure not to disturb my sleep.” She said and turned to leave.

“I did what you asked me to, so rest assured.” Lu Qiang replied.

“Great!”, she said without even turning to look at him and left.

Jiang Yang was surprised to see her attitude and the way she talked to Lu Qiang, without being affected by him like other

girls did while Lu Feng was not surprised at all as he knew her since she worked in Lu Corporation and he was aware that she was not like other girls who would drool over Lu Qiang because of his status and his money.

He asked Lu Qiang about why he was with her, it was just because he felt bad for Jiang Yuyan and he didn't want her hurt even if Lu Qiang didn't do anything wrong. Seeing her hurt, was the painful thing for him too as he loved her. It was a different thing that he won't be able to have her for him but the feelings he had for her were still there in his heart and those were genuine and always express itself in form care for her.

200 Cold Jiang Yuyan

When Lu Qiang walked towards his room, Jiang Yang called him and said, “If you are planning to talk to her now, then let me tell you one thing. She doesn’t mean what she says when she is upset or angry.” Lu Qiang nodded.

Lu Qiang, Lu Feng and Jiang Yang went to their own rooms. Lu Qiang first freshened up and decided to go to Jiang Yuyan’s room. He wondered, she must be back to her room till now and went straight to her room. He knocked on the door. Jiang Yuyan opened the door just to see, Lu Qiang standing in front of her.

Upon seeing him, she didn’t know how to react and stood frozen at her place while continuing to stare at him. She felt surprised, happy, sad, emotional and everything at the same moment. Lu Qiang was expecting this reaction from her and said to get her out of a daze, “Can I come inside?”

She shook her head to clear it and said, “No!” She answered. It looked like, she was still angry about how he behaved before. like she didn’t exist for him.

“I know you are upset and it is all my fault, so let me explain everything this once.” Lu Qiang requested her. He genuinely wanted to explain her everything and to take away her anger, without using the other way which might be more hurting.

“I don’t want any kind of explanation from you. just go back to your room. She said and she was about to close the door but Lu Qiang stopped her by holding the door before it closed completely and said, “Let me come inside first or I will stay here until you let me in.

When Jiang Yuyan was about to say okay, Zhi Ruo came back. She looked at both of them and smiled. Jiang Yuyan didn’t smile back. She averted her sight from Zhi Ruo and said in a low voice to Lu Qiang, “Your girl is here, go back to her.”

Lu Qiang turned his head to look at Zhi Ruo. Zhi Ruo said good night to both of them and went inside the room in a hurry. To look at both of them, she understood, something was not right between them.

Upon seeing her going into the room next to Lu Qiang, expressions on Jiang Yuyan's face changed. She frowned and walked inside her room by keeping the door open. Lu Qiang went inside and closed the door.

Jiang Yuyan was standing near her bed while facing her back to him. Lu Qiang stood behind her at a distance and spoke, "Truth is not what you saw or what you are thinking. I want....."

"I don't care Lu Qiang. No need to explain anything. You are free to do what you want to. You don't have to feel pressurized just because you thought you loved me. Anyhow, I never said I love you so you don't have to feel worried that you will hurt me." Jiang Yuyan said while still facing her back to him.

Lu Qiang sighed and said, "You don't have to confess it because I already know, you love me."

"No Lu Qiang, I don't. so feel free to move ahead. I don't mind it." Again she said it which hurt Lu Qiang.

Lu Qiang stepped in her direction, turned her to face her towards him. He looked into her eyes and asked, "You really don't love me?"

"No! I don't love you," she replied while looking back into his eyes without hesitating for a single moment.

Lu Qiang didn't think for a bit and kissed her, but this time there was no response from her. He was kissing her but she was just letting him kiss without resisting him. She was not kissing him back.

Lu Qiang realized it. He parted away, held her face in his palms and said again, "I know you are angry Yuyan but let me explain first. I don't want all this, I want you."

Jiang Yuyan didn't look affected by his words and replied looking into his eyes, "I can't give you anything but that girl can. I didn't even let you touch my chest yet, even though we

were close so many times. I know how disappointed you must be feeling with me and I am not sure, if I would let you do anything more with me ever as you know, how my body reacts whenever you tried to go ahead.”

Lu Qiang listened to everything she wanted to say. He felt sad to hear it as going closer to her was not his main intention ever and if she wanted, he was ready to stay away from her always, but what she was thinking right at the moment was not right.

“Yuyan! I don’t want that. I am not disappointed in you either. I just want you to be with me by my side.” He replied with sadness on his face as he felt hurt to hear her words.

“But I don’t want you to be unhappy, for your whole life just because of my personal issues. So you are free to go,” She replied without blinking an eye and standing still with his palms still holding her face.

Upon hearing her words, Lu Qiang shuddered in a fear to lose her. He felt like, his heart might stop beating. He was cursing himself for not trying to meet her or call her in the past few days. He was cursing himself for not looking at her even once and wondered why he didn’t hug her the moment he saw her. He was cursing himself for all those things he did intentionally or unintentionally that hurt her.

“I don’t want to, Yuyan. Just listen to me at least once.” The man who never bent down in front of anyone even in the worst condition, he was now ready to beg to his woman.

He hugged her but she didn’t hug him back and stood frozen in her place. Lu Qiang realized it and asked while still hugging her, “So you don’t love me?”

“Hmm! I don’t.” Jiang Yuyan replied coldly, still standing frozen in his embrace.

“You don’t care if you see me with someone else?” He asked again.

“Hmm! I don’t.” Jiang Yuyan replied in the same way again.

Lu Qiang moved his head back and looked at her in her eyes. She looked back in his eyes too as she didn’t have any regret about what she said just now.

Lu Qiang let go of her and stepped back. He was looking at her with his miserable eyes but she looked determined about what she just said and didn't change a bit, even if she saw him like this. Lu Qiang didn't know what to do at the moment. He was ready with his second plan before if she won't listen to him but when the situation arose, he was hurt and didn't want to do anything.

For a moment he felt lost but knew, he can't give up and he had to make her realize how much she loved him and she can't live without him. The man who had gone through all kinds of hardship against the world looked helpless in front of a woman he loved. He took a deep breath and left the room without saying a word.

Jiang Yuyan who was standing with the determination to do exactly what she said the moment before, broke into tears once Lu Qiang left her room. When she saw Zhi Ruo all this time with Lu Qiang, she felt jealous but she never thought to do something like this. As time passed by, she started to see lacking things in her. The one, she found was the fact that she was still reluctant to get touched by him on her chest. She thought she might never let him do anything more. All this time, she was relaxed to think, she would be fine with all the love she got from Lu Qiang but now, for her it was a lie with which she was trying to fool herself.

Since Jiang Yuyan saw Zhi Ruo, she felt afraid about herself and thought she should not keep him waiting for her and make him suffer because of her own fears from the past. She thought he deserved to get all those things which she might not give him.